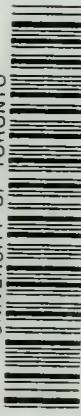


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARIES



3 1761 01660082 7

973-2

Accession No.

Shelf No.

6-322201



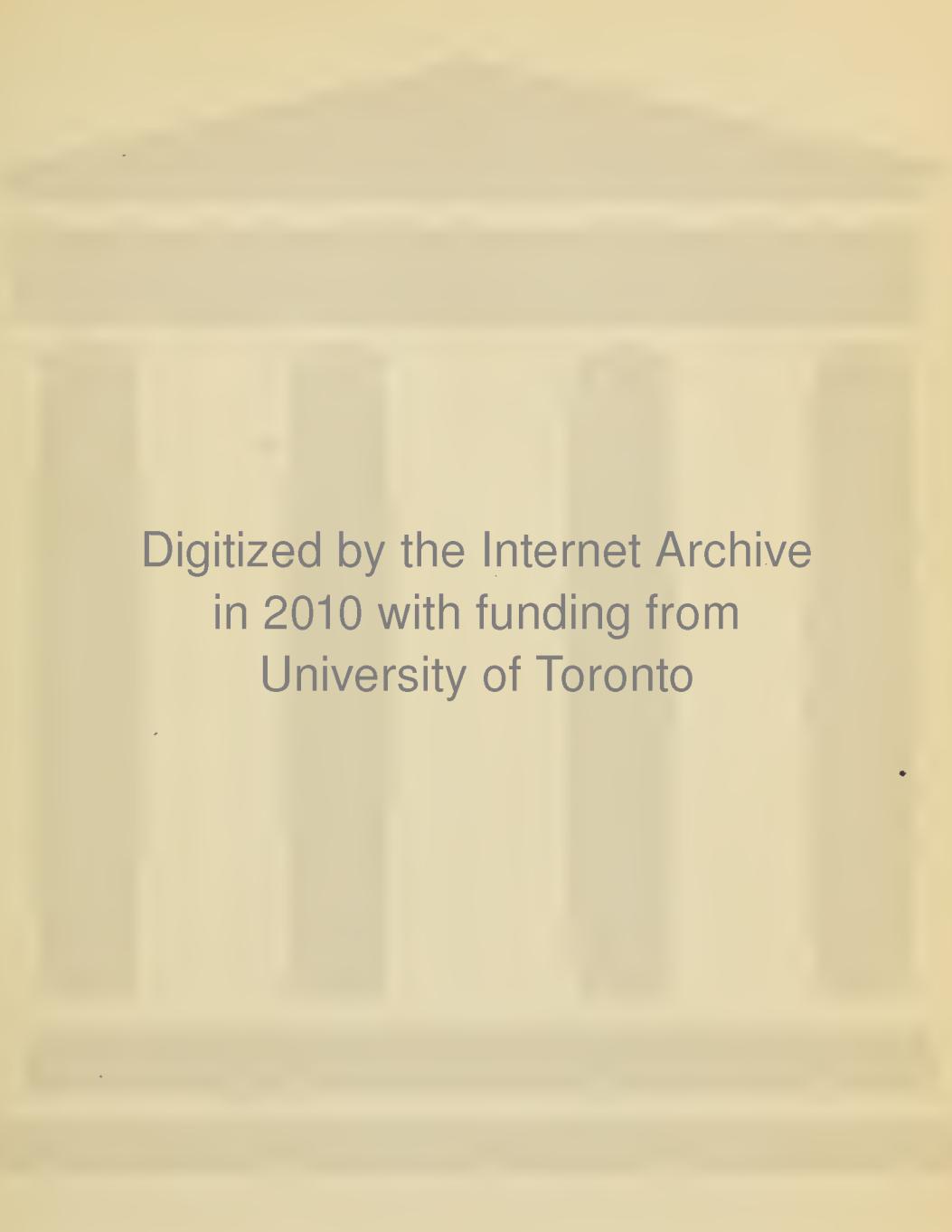
CANCELLED

Sold Feb. 1939

Received

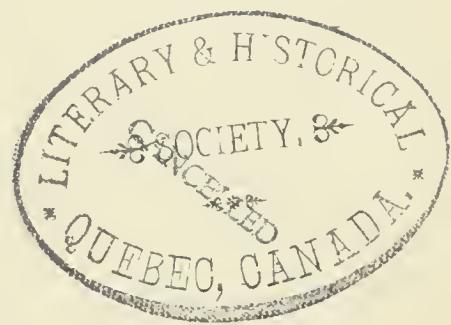






Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
University of Toronto

<http://www.archive.org/details/sirferdinandogo03baxt>





Church of St. Budeaux, Devon, containing the Gorges Family Monument,
restored by the Maine Historical Society.



15
100

THE

Publications of the Prince Society.

Established May 25th, 1858.

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES

AND

HIS PROVINCE OF MAINE.



Boston:
PRINTED FOR THE SOCIETY,
By JOHN WILSON AND SON.
1890.

439308
11.10.45

TWO HUNDRED AND FIFTY COPIES.

HUS
B3557s

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES

AND HIS

PROVINCE OF MAINE.

INCLUDING

THE BRIEF RELATION, THE BRIEF NARRATION, HIS
DEFENCE, THE CHARTER GRANTED TO HIM,
HIS WILL, AND HIS LETTERS.

EDITED WITH A

MEMOIR

AND

HISTORICAL ILLUSTRATIONS

BY

JAMES PHINNEY BAXTER, A.M.

VOL. III.

Boston:

PUBLISHED BY THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

1890.

Handwritten signature



Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1890, by
THE PRINCE SOCIETY,
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington.



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

LETTERS AND OTHER PAPERS.

	PAGE
GORGES TO CECIL	1-176
GORGES AND OTHERS, COMMISSIONERS AT PLYMOUTH, TO CECIL .	2
THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, GORGES, AND OTHERS, TO THE COUNCIL	18-19
THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, GORGES, AND STALLENGE, TO THE COUNCIL	7-25
THE MATTER IN DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TOWN OF PLYMOUTH AND GORGES	14-16
THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, GORGES, AND OTHERS TO CECIL . .	17
GORGES AND BAGGS TO CECIL	19-20
GORGES TO THE LORD HIGH ADMIRAL AND CECIL	30-31
THE LORD ADMIRAL, LORD CHAMBERLAIN, AND CECIL TO FENNER AND GORGES	31-33
GORGES TO BURGHLEY	33-34
GORGES AND HARRIS TO CECIL	37-38
HOWARD, MOUNTJOY, RALEGH, AND GORGES TO ESSEX	38-40
GORGES TO ESSEX	40-61

Table of Contents.

	PAGE
GORGES TO THE COUNCIL	43-242
GORGES TO RALEGH	63-64
GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL	64-292
THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, GORGES, AND HARRIS TO THE COUNCIL	80-81
HEATH TO GORGES	84-86
GORGES TO NOTTINGHAM AND CECIL	88
EXAMINATION OF GORGES	92-94
THE DEPUTY MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH TO SALISBURY	122-123
DAVIS TO THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE	134-135
GORGES TO CHALLONS	139-140
POPHAM TO SALISBURY	143-145
CHALLONS TO THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE	145-148
GORGES TO TRELAWNY	176-178
GORGES TO BATH	181-182
GORGES ET AL. TO TRELAWNY	182-183
GORGES TO CALVERT	184-187
GORGES TO BUCKINGHAM	187-207
GORGES TO COKE	190-280
GORGES TO CONWAY	191-251
GORGES AND OTHERS TO CONWAY	192-194
DECLARATION OF GORGES	195-197
GORGES TO THE KING	197-298
NICHOLAS TO GORGES AND THE MASTERS OF THE MERCHANT-MEN	199-200

Table of Contents.

vii

	PAGE
GORGES TO NICHOLAS	201-229
OSGOOD, MONDY, AND THE CONSTABLES OF ST. ANSTELL TO CONWAY	230
CONWAY TO GORGES	238-239
PETITION OF GORGES TO THE COUNCIL	251-252
GORGES TO MASON	252-257
GORGES AND MASON TO WANNERTON AND GIBBONS	258-260
GORGES TO WINDEBANK	263-295
CONSIDERATIONS BY GORGES	265-268
PROPOSED DRAFT OF A LETTER FROM THE KING TO LIEUTENANTS-JUSTICES	268-270
GORGES TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS FOR PLANTATIONS	272-273
GORGES TO WILLIAM GORGES	275-276
GORGES TO VANE, WINTHROP, AND OTHERS	280-282
ANSWER TO ORDER OF REFERENCE RESPECTING CLAIMS AGAINST GORGES	283-286
PETITION OF GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL	292
PETITION OF GORGES TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS FOR FOREIGN PLANTATIONS	293-294
GORGES TO WINTHROP	295-296
GORGES TO LORD FAIRFAX	298-299
COMMISSION OF GORGES TO CHAMPERNOUN, JOSSELYN, ET ALS.	301-315
ACT OF INCORPORATION OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY	318
CONSTITUTION, RULES, AND REGULATIONS OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY	319-322

Table of Contents.

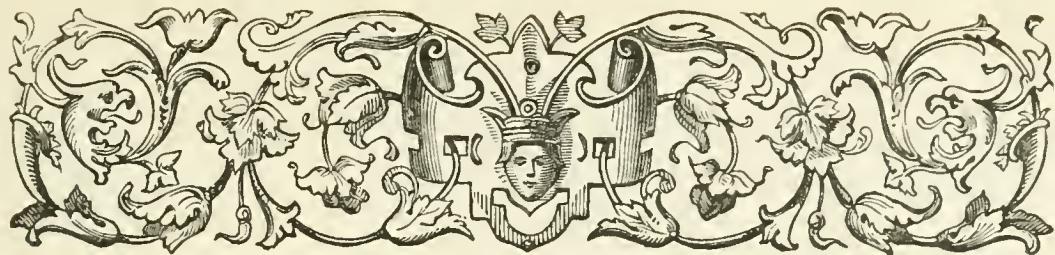
	PAGE
OFFICERS OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY FROM ITS ORGANIZATION IN 1858 TO 1890.	323-324
OFFICERS OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY, 1890.	325
MEMBERS OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY	326-330
PUBLICATIONS OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY	331-332
VOLUMES IN PREPARATION BY THE PRINCE SOCIETY	332
PURPOSE AND WORK OF THE PRINCE SOCIETY, BY THE REV. DR. SLAFTER	333-340
<hr/>	
INDEX	341-353



LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
CHURCH OF ST. BUDAUX, DEVON	<i>Frontispiece</i>
LETTER OF GEORGE POPHAM FROM SAGADAHOC, <i>in fac-simile</i> , . . .	164
THE HOUSE OF SIR FERDINANDO GORGES AT BRISTOL	257





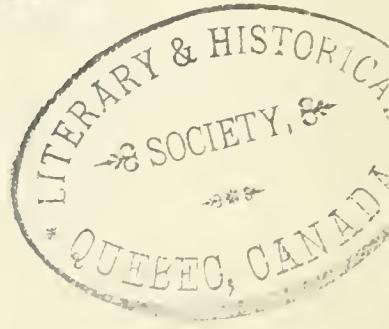
THE LETTERS
OF
SIR FERDINANDO GORGES,

COVERING THE PERIOD FROM 1595 TO 1646.

(Cecil Papers 45/21.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE, I have written unto your Ho: many letters sithence the returne of the fleete, but I doubt that by some meanes they miscaried by the waye, for that I receyved not anye notice from your ho: they were receyved, wherfore I beseech your ho: to cause some of your secretaryes, to give me knowledge of the receypte of such letters, as upon occasion I shall send unto your ho: from time to time. The answere of your ho: last letters to the commissioners, is referred to the comminge upp of M^r Stal-lenge him selfe who wilbe at court about the beginninge of the next month. humbly recommending my duty unto your Ho: wth unfayned assurance, of an ernest desire to dis-charge



The Letters of

charge all the dutyes of an honest mann unto your ho: as
on that wilbe Ever

Your Ho: to Commaund / FARD: GORGES.

from the fort att PLIMOTH the 29 of Septem: 1596.

Add: To the Right honorable S^r Robert Ceccill knight, principall secretarye to
her Ma^{tie}. End: 29 Sept 1596 S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r. 1-2 p.

(Cecil Papers 45/23.)

SIR F. GORGES AND OTHERS, COMMISSIONERS AT PLYMOUTH,
TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHTE HONORABLE, our humble dueties remembred: wee
have at the lenghte fynished our dispatche unto yo^r honor,
the which for some tyme was deferred unto M^r Stallenge
his Coming uppe himselfe unto yo^r honor, whoe cann best
make relasyon of what hath benn donn from the beginning.
Wherefore wee have thought it best, wholye to referr itt unto
him, to make that plaine, w^{ch} otherwise maie seeme doutefull
and tedyous thus praying unto the almighty for th increse
of yo^r honor, doe humblie take our leave from Plymouth
this 29th of September anno 1596.

Yo^r honors most humblie at Comanndem^t/

FARD: GORGES. GEORGE CARY.⁵¹⁷

WILLIAM STRODE.⁵¹⁶ CHR: HARRIS.⁵¹⁸

W^m STALLENGE.⁵¹⁹

Add: To the Right honorable Sir Roberte Cycell knight, principall Secretarye
unto her Ma^{tie}. End: 29 Sept: 1596 The Commissione^{rs} at Plymmothe to
my M^r. 1-2 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 45/44.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.⁵²⁰

RIGHT HONORABLE, I beseech you to accept of these fewe lines, by the w^{ch} I doe humbly intreat the continuaunce of your ho: favour wheruppon I doe build my hopes, as already having received assuraunce, by many benefits, from your ho. towards me, wherby you have bownd me to continue unfaynedly

Your ho: to commaund during life / FARD: GORGES.

from the fort at PLIMOTH the 6th of October 1596.

Add: To the Right honorable S^r Robert Ceccill knight, principall secretary to her Ma^{tie}. End: 6 Oct. 1596 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my M^r. 1-2 p.

(Cecil

⁵¹⁶ Sir William Strode, of Newnham, is celebrated in Prince's *Worthies of Devon* as "a person of great honour, worth, and esteeme in the county, who died a little before the Civil War began." He was knighted at Whitehall in 1597.

⁵¹⁷ Sir George Cary, of Cockington, was Treasurer of Ireland and afterward Lord Deputy. Prince, in his *Worthies of Devon*, says that "he took up his honourable sword in a stormy, tempestuous time, when that kingdom was strangely actuated with the spirit of rebellion, which occasioned him much trouble during the little space he held it." After speaking of his retirement to his country-feat, he continues, "knowing how pleasing a sacrifice to God charity and good deeds are, he purposed to do something for the poor, and accordingly he set about building of seven alms houses for their use and comfort." He died in 1616.

⁵¹⁸ Christopher Harris, who was at this time serving as an associate commissioner with Gorges, was made the Deputy Vice-Admiral of Devon in place of Sir John Gilbert, being more in favor with Cecil than Gorges, who, in a former letter, applied for this office.

⁵¹⁹ William Stallenge was one of the active merchants of Plymouth, and in favor with Buckingham. He represented Plymouth in Parliament in 1601.

⁵²⁰ This letter doubtless refers to the Deputy Vice-Admiralty of the shire, an office which Sir Ferdinando greatly coveted, but which Cecil was not inclined to grant to one known to be the friend of his rival Essex; hence he turned a deaf ear to Sir Ferdinando's appeals and appointed another to the place.

The Letters of

(Cecil Papers 46/5.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND OTHERS
TO THE COUNCIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE/ Our humble dutyes beinge remembred/ may it please your Lo^{ps}: to understand, that this present day, ther is arived here a shippe of Hambrough⁵²¹ called the fortune laden wth wheat. pretending (as yt may also appere under my Lo: Admiralls hand) a passport from her Ma^{tie} to be one of the tenn to passe for the Duke of Florence.⁵²² Yeat consideringe the great scarcitie of corne in these partes by the furnishinge of shippes wth breade from hence, we thought it our duties humbly to entreat your Lo^{pes} to consider of yt, and to give such directions as unto your Lo^{ps} wisdomes shall seeme good, humbly desiringe we may have notice of your pleasures by the first, for that we have presumed to stay the same untill your Lo^{ps} pleasures be farther knowne therin. And thus we humbly take our leaves of your Lo^{ps}

Your Lo^{ps} humbly to commande/

HUMFREY FOUNES

Maior.

FARD: GORGES.

CHR: HARRIS.

from PLIMOTH the 27th of October 1596.

Add: To the Right honorable our singuler good Lo^{ds} the Lo^{ds} of her Ma^{tie} privye Counsayle. End: 27 Oct. 1596. Mayor of Plymmothe. S^r Fa: Gorges. M^r Chr Harris to y^r Lls. A shippe of Hamburghe Laden wth wheat for y^e D. of Florence stayd by y^m for w^{ch} they desire to knowe their L^{ps} pleasure.
I p.

(Cecil

⁵²¹ Hamburg.

⁵²² This was Ferdinand de Medici, born in 1549. When fourteen years of age he was created Cardinal *diacre* by

Pope Pius IV. On the death of his brother in 1587, he became third Grand Duke of Tuscany. He died February 17th, 1608.

(Cecil Papers 46/9.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE. my humble duty remembred; Accord-
inge unto your ho: pleasure I have had conference wth M^r
Stallenge, who desireth to take an other course in that
matter. for myne owne part, I protest ther is nothinge pleaf-
eth me better, then to be employed, in any maner of service,
from or for your ho: And therfore I doe hartely pray you
to be so assured of me, as havinge noe other meanes to
satisfie those obligations, wherin I stand bownd so manye
wayes unto your ho: as by that I finde and daylye heare of
your honorable favours towardes me, wherfore through the
willingnes of an honest minde I have vowed to be

Your ho: to command duriinge life / FARD: GORGES.

May it please your ho: to take notice of this letter wth
we have sent to theyr Lo^{ps} /

from PLIMOTH this 27 of October 1596.

Add: To the Right honorable S^r Robert Ceecill knight, principall secretarye to
her Ma^{tie}: End: 27 Octobr: 1596 S^r Ferdinando Gorge to my M^r from
Plimouth. At Richmonde.⁵²³ 1-2 p.

(Cecil Papers 46/29.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE. I finde by a letter from my L. your
father your honorable care of this place, and in it I doe ac-
knowledge your exceeding favour towards my selfe, for the
first you will purchace unto your selfe love and honour from all
men,

⁵²³ Where the Court was then residing. It was the favorite residence of
Elizabeth, and there she died.

men, for the second, you have the same power over me that I have over my selfe, humbly prayinge that yt will please your ho: to take howld of this present occasion, wherby we have receyved warning of the worst, for it is most certeyne, by the report of those that come from the coast, that the enemy hath assembled a great power (and as they doe give it forth) doe entend it to this place, wherfore I doe humbly pray that some order may presently be taken, for the better securing of this place, the w^{ch} must be by a greater proportion of men as I haue hertofore writte to be resident for the preventing of suddayne surprizinge, not wthout reason to be doubted for that here Commeth continually shipping of all sortes and lye sometimes 3 or 4 dayes together in Causon baye ⁵²⁴ and we cann never understand what they are nor have any sufficient meanes to command them, wherfore may yt please your ho: to Consider how Convenient it were ther were appoyned to lye some shippinge here of good force, w^{ch} may alway be ready to be commaunded upon all occasions, and yf yt shall seeme daungerous for her Ma^{ts} shippinge to ly heere in respect of the doubt of fire or any other misfortune, ther may be appoyned some others such as shall be thought meet by your ho^{rs} for her Ma^{ts} pay w^{ch} may be kept wth some reasonable Company of menn, saving att such times when ther shalbe present occasion of theyr service. And thus I humbly take my leave of your ho: still restinge

Your ho: ever to command / FARD: GORGES.

from the fort att PLIMOTH this 2 of November 1596.

Add. To the Right honorable S^r Robert Ceccill Knight principall secretarye to her Ma^{ty}. End: 2 No: 1596. S^r Far. Gorges to my M^r from Plymmothe.

I p.

⁵²⁴ Cawsand Bay, on the coast of Devonshire.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 46/33.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND W. STAL-
LENGE TO THE COUNCIL.

WITH the remembraunc of o' humble duties. It maye please yo^r Lpps to be advertised wee have heire taken order for three vessells to be Imploied in her ma^{ties} service accord-
ing to the Instructions received From yo^r Hono^{rs} in that behalfe. The one of them appointed For the Burlinges, is a pinnase of aboute 45 tonns belonging to Captaine Legatt who we finde verie willinge and therfore have appointed him to goe Captaine in her, shee is allredie victualled bie him and others for 3 monethes and will be readie this next daie to sett saile. The pinnase he is contented to adventure him selfe upon hope of the bennifitt of the third parte of that w^{ch} maie be gotten in the Journey. For the victualling and mens wages as yet we have not determined at whose Charge the same shall goe: The oth^r For Cape (finnester) is a carvell⁵²⁵ of aboute 21 tonns wherin goeth For Captaine and m^r one Thomas Nesonn, of this towne and departed From hense this last night he hath in her wth him selfe 18 menn victualled For two monethes: the carvill and Com-
pany,

⁵²⁵ The carvel or caravel was a clumsy craft with a full round bow and square poop. It was rigged like a galley, with lateen or triangular sails suspended by a long yard at an angle of about forty-five degrees. Such sails could only be conveniently used on vessels of moderate size, hence the caravel rarely exceeded the burden of a hundred tons, and was usually much smaller.

These three small vessels were sent out to observe the movements of the Spaniards, and to make a prompt report to Gorges at Plymouth. One was to proceed to the vicinity of the Barlenqa, another to lie off Cape Finisterre, and a third to watch near Scilly Island for a foe approaching by the Bristol Channel.

pany goe upon their thirdes onlie the victualling part is at her ma^{ties} charge, For (Sillie) we have taken upp a pinnase of this towne w^{ch} shalbe made readie wth all possible speede, and so yo^r Lpps shalbe advertised what the whole charge will amount unto, w^{ch} is to be borne by her ma^{tie}: Wee doe not understand that their are in theise partes any of the Captaines men^{con}ed in y^r Lpps L^{ers} wherfore the Importance of the service confidered we thought it not meete to lose any time by attending their comming:

Wee have heire Intelligence by sondrie persons that about 30 daies past theire weare at Baion in galizia⁵²⁶ above 30 failes of Spanish Shippes of warr bounde for Lisbona to Joine wth others For the makinge of an armie w^{ch} as the generall reporte goeth, is to come for England or Ireland, but in particuler as some doe reporte for this porte of Plimmouth: It is said they bring wth them at the least 40 Seminarie Prifstes,⁵²⁷ the most parte of them English men: Thus much we have thought it o^r duties to advertise unto yo^r Lpps: And so doe verie humblie take our Leave, Plimouth the third of November ann^o 1596.

Yo^r Lpps humblie at commaundm^t/

HUMFREY FONNES FARD: GORGES.

Maior. W^m STALLENGE.

Add: To the Right Honorables the Lo^s: of her Ma^{tie} Moste honorable privie Counsell. End: 3 No: 1596. Mayo^r of Plymmothe S^r Far: Gorges M^r Stallenge to y^e Lls. Concerning their setting out of 3 Pynneses for to discover, according to their Lo^{ps} dyre^ccons. 1 p.

(Cecil

⁵²⁶ Bayona is an open haven in the Province of Galicia.

⁵²⁷ Priests educated in the Spanish seminaries were at this time the dread of all Protestant Englishmen, as they

were looked upon as deadly enemies of the State, and when taken were often summarily disposed of by the halter and knife.

(Cecil Papers 46/55.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dutie remembred. Maye it please yo^r honor to be advertised accordinge to your letter, dated the 13th of this p^rsent. I have made inquirie of the prises of Corne, and is heare folde in the markett for 14 and 15^s the bushell and it is greatelie feared if this be not sold accordinge to yo^r honors former order, it will rise to be at 20^s. The quanttie of it is a hundred threscore and six tunes, the burden of the shippe is 200, so as it is supposed there is munition aswell as wheat. Wherefore in my poore opinion (under yo^r honors Correction) it were necessarie that it might be unlodden as wee hadde alredie taken order it shoulde be, in especially Considering howe harde a matter it is to perswade the people that they goe not to the spanierdes when it is so generallie knowne they have made suche provision that noe men shall passe their Coaste before they have served their owne turnes, upon what nacion or whose subiectes soever wth owt the respect of anye passe or lycenc that they can have: more I thought it my duetie to advertise yo^r honor, had not yo^r warrant of staye Come as it did they necessitie of the poore woulde have inforced theim to have offered som owtrage, bothe upon the shippe and goodes. The Considera \tilde{n} on of all w^{ch} I leave unto yo^r honors wisedom: I receaved other letters of the 03th of this present for the raiſeing of 50 men to make my former number, 100, the one of theim from their L^{ps} and an other from my Lorde yo^r honors father that from my L. directed me unto a letter

from yo^r honor, the w^{ch} I have not as yet receaved, so as I can faye nothinge unto hit The Pynnyfes and Carvell attendeth onelie the wynde, all though there be no monye to be gotten from the Customer:⁵²⁸ for my owne parte I doe use all the meanes I can possibley for the furnisheing of the Forte and Island, but I am owt all that ever I am able to make of my owne, or by Credit of my friendes, and my truste is that by yo^r honors meanes fourth wth their may be heare Continuallie in the handes of some honest man a proportion of money for the furnisheinge of such occasions as shall be needeful from tym to tym: If some such Course be not taken the want of hit will soone be found.

praeinge for the increase of yo^r honor, I humblye take my leave. From the Forte at Plymouthe the 16th of November 1596.

Yo^r honors to comaunde /

FARD: GORGES.

p^t script As concerninge the price of the corne yo^r ho: writes to understande of I thought it meetest to refer it to the Relasian of the Maior and others of Plymouth, whoe knowe better then my self the differenc betweene Market Corne and Shipp corne, and will be humble futers to yo^r honor in that behalf.

Add. To the Right honorable S^r Robert Cifill knight principale Secretarye to her Ma^{tie}. End: 16 No: 1596 S^r Fard: Gorges to my M^r Certifieing what quantitie of wheat is in the Duke of Florence shippe there stayd. 1 p.

⁵²⁸ That is, the officer of customs at Plymouth.

(Cecil Papers 46.99.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

OUR humble duties unto your honnor remembrede. this laste daie here arived a brittaine boate and in her certain engleshe marchaunts w^{ch} departed from Morles,⁵²⁹ the seconde of this moneth, wher they saie it was reportede that of the Spainshe fleete there were 38 faile caste awaye in the baye of Arcaxon⁵³⁰ on the coast of biscaye and other 30^{tie} faile upon the Sems, wth the greteste parte of the men that weare in them. Herewth it maye please yo^r honor to receave thexamination of one of the faide marchaunts wth whom the rest doe all agree but neither of them can yelde anie good reason howe the newes was brought to Morles or by whom, as wee shall understande more fertentie yo^r honnor shalbe advertieside therof. Capten crofts and Captan Harper as yet have hade no winde to departe from hence, Accordinge to yo^r honnors letters the Fleminge is contentide and hathe alredie unladen some parte of his wheate, but under our promise to see him paide his fraighe here for so muche corne as he dothe delivere, w^{ch} wee thought reasonable consideringe the Duke is bownd to paye but for that w^{ch} hee dothe Recē wherfore wee humblie praye your honnors letters in that behalf unto James Bagge⁵³¹ or in his absents to his servant

⁵²⁹ That is, from Morlaix, a small trading-town in Bretagne, on the north coast of France.

⁵³⁰ Bassin d'Arcachon, a bay on the coast of France.

⁵³¹ Sir James Bagg was a man of enterprise and daring, a dependant of

Buckingham, whose fortunes he faithfully followed to the end. He was mayor of Plymouth in 1595, a year noted in its annals for the death of two of England's greatest admirals, Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins. He represented Plymouth in Parliament

servant Thomas Glanvile w^{ch} dothe Recei the Corne that they see the m^r paide his fraught according to his Charterpartie soe as wee be not trobled for the same.

Off late here arived a barke of Hampton w^{ch} about 30^{tie} daies paste mette wth 13 fayle of Hamburgers goeinge in to Lisborne laden wth Corne of w^{ch} shēe tooke one of about 300 tonnes: The Hulke that is here hathe Charterparties in Dutche Italian and Spanishe that in Spanish wee have seene wherby the m^r is bownde to go wth his ladinge directlie for Leghorne and not to enter in to anye other porte but keepe the sea unles uppon verie extreame occations but wth theise condicōns that if at his comminge to Leghorne his Corne by longe lyinge at the sea or other mishappes be not suche as is meete to be recevide the Duke maye leave the same and not paie hime anye fraighe or other duties. Farther if the m^r by force of weather or other waies should enter into any other porte and ther unlade his corne. That then hee is to seeke his fraighe of suche as shall recei the same. And the Duke to be freede theirof wthout any farder condicōn to binde the m^r to make certiefficate, or use any other diligence to prove by what meanes he was inforcedē to come in to anye such porte. So that the m^r (if he please) maye as well go for Lisborne as the restē and not therby incurre anye danger at all againste the Duke of Tuscan. thus much wee have thought it meete to advertise and soe beseeching the allmighty for the longe Continuance of

yor

ment in 1604, and the next year was again elected its mayor. He received the honor of knighthood on September 19th, 1625, and accompanied Bucking-

ham on his disastrous expedition to the isle of Rhé, where he fell while making a fruitless attack on an intrenched camp of the enemy, October 29th, 1627.

yo^r honnors prosperous healthe doe humblie take our leaves
Plymouth the 4th of December 1596

Your honnors humblie at commande / FARD: GORGES.
[Signature torn off.]⁵⁸²

Add: To the Righte honorable S^r Robert Cecill knight prinſipall ſecretarie to
her ma^{tie}. End: 4 Dec. 1596 S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 47/16.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble duty remembred. may it please your Ho: to be adverſified, that the 8th of this preſent here was a man of Roterdam, whose name is Peter Fecke m^r of a ſhippe called the blacke Egle of the fame towne, that was taken fowndinge of the Harbour from the one ſide unto the other, what his meaning was therin I knowe not, but the time beinge ſuch as yt is yt Cannot be but ſuspicioſus wherfore in diſcharge of my duty I thought it meete to adverſife your Ho: of yt. I have examined divers that have knowne him of longe time, both English men and his owne country menn of the manner of his life and Converfation hertoſore, and they all doe ſeeme to protest much for his honeſty and ſimple intent, as having a deſire only to acquaynt himſelfe wth the harbour taking it to be a thinge belonginge unto him as he was a mariner, not thinkinge he had committed any offence, but I have taken order for his forth Comming and do meane that he ſhall reſt here untill I know further your Ho: pleafeure. The

⁵⁸² From parts of the flouriſh left, dorſement, it was torn off before the the ſignature torn off was evidently letter was ſent. Stallenge's. Judging from the en-

The Shippinge that Commeth from Rochell and Burdeuxe and those parts, doe all of them Confirm our last to your Ho: Concerning the Casting-away of the Spaniards, & all of them after one manner, as I cann by any meanes discover any more certeyntie your Ho: shall receyve y^t from time to time, according to my duty, Committing the preservation of your Ho: to the Almighty, I humbly take my leave, from the fort at Plimoth this 10th of December 1596.

Your Ho: to Command / FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the Right honorable S^r Robert Ceccill knight principall secretary to her ma^{tie} End: 10 December 1596 S^r Ferdnande Gorges to my master. Concerning a Fleming that sounded the harbrough. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 48/44.)

THE MATTER IN DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TOWN OF
PLYMOUTH AND SIR F. GORGES.

As touchinge causes in question before the lords and others of her Ma^{ts} most honorable privie Councell betweene the Maio^r of Plymouth and the inhabitants of the same of the one partie, and S^r Ferdinando Gorgers knight Cap^{en} of the fort there latelie erected of the other partie. The said Maio^r and Inhabitants for avoydinge of all inconvenyencies that may hereafter ensue, Humblie pray yo^r lls. it may be set downe as an order under yo^r Hands to be from henceforth dulie observed.

First whereas the said S^r Ferdinando Gorges will not have the Maio^r of the said Burrough being a Justice of peace wthin

wthin the same, to have to doe wth the examininge or punishinge of anie the soldiers belonginge to y^e forte for any cause of fellony, or for other offences punishable committed wthin the said Towne or Burrough; wherein the said Maio^r and inhabitants humblie pray yo^r lls: resolucon.

And whereas the said S^r Ferdinando seeketh to have the soldiers appertayninge to the said fort to be freed from arrest wth the mace wthin the said Burrough for causes of debt and such like; The said Maio^r & inhabitants humblie praie yo^r lls. resolucon therein, the same tendinge to the losse of the Charter in denyinge Justice to anie.

And the said Maio^r and inhabitants humblie pray of allowance of their jurisdiccons, liberties and auctorities as they heretofore have had and enjoyed by the graunt of her Ma^{ts} most noble progenitors: And that it will please yo^r lls. to set downe order that S^r Ferdinando Gorges intermedle not wthin the same for anie cause of justice, as in yo^r lls: former articles under seale ready to be shewed is set downe; nor to commaund the Maio^r by precept or otherwise as he hath done.

And where S^r Ferdinando Gorges a while since caused one John Hele a younge man of the Towne deputie Towne Clarke to be imprest in his fight to serve at the Island, the said Hele being sent to him in a message from the Maio^r of the Towne. That it will please yo^r lls. to sett downe order for his discharge, And that the same order may extend to restraine the said S^r Ferdinando to imprest anie person inhabitinge hereafter wthin the said Burrough.

And whereas at the request of the said S^r Ferdinando and the present necessitie of the service, at the foddaine cominge

cominge to the Towne of the Companies of soldiers there, the said Maio^r and Inhabitants of the Towne (altho the cause concerned the Countrey generally, and not the Towne in particuler) yelded to the charge of lodginge of the soldiers, and fyrewood for their Court of guard kept wthin the fort, w^{ch} hath already cost the said Towne above £120, of w^{ch} charges the said Maio^r and inhabitants pray from henceforth to be dismissed & freed, and that they maie have yo^r lp. warrant for the same, for that they be not able anie longer to contynewe it.

And where the said S^r Ferdinando Gorges requireth to muster the inhabitants of the Towne when he pleaseth, and giveth out speeches to drawe the Companies and forces of the Towne when and as farr as he listeth; The said Maio^r and inhabitants pray that the Maio^r for the tyme beinge wth other expert men of the Towne may have libertie to traine and muster the inhabitants of the Towne as heretofore they have used accordaninge to the statute made Annis 4 et 5 P. et M. cap. 3. tit. musters: And that S^r Ferdinando be restrained to drawe anie the inhabitants into the Fort or Island, or otherwise to carry them anie where out of the Towne, but upon spetiall occasion, and that no further neither but as they may retorne againe in a short tyme to the Towne for safegarde of the same if cause require. yet alwayes allowinge the said S^r Ferdinando to take view and surveye of the musters of the Towne.

End: 1596. The matter in difference betwene y^e Towne of Plymmothe and S^r Fardinando Gorges. 1 1-4 pp.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 37/45.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND OTHERS
TO SIR R. CECIL.

OURE humble duties unto you^r hono^r Remembred/ By you^r hono^{rs} ſtres wee understande that Philipp Cursin hath complayned of us Concerninge the wheate here landed oute of the Dutche ſhippe, wherin he hath greatlye abuſed you^r hono^r and done us wronge For ſo muche as the faide wheate was nether Receaved or measured by anye of us, Butt by M^r Bagg his Servante as it was appointed he beinge Cursin his Factor Nether have we ſett him anye price but that he hath and maye ſell the ſame to whome, and howe he lyſte for his moſte advantage ſo as it be not carried oute of the Realme; by yo^r hono^{rs} firſte ſtres wee were appointed to unlade one or two hundred quarters of the ſaid wheate wincheſter measure, and for ſo muche we gave order unto M^r Bagg his Servante as by his ſtres here wth he dothe Cer- tefie Cursin, as alſo that nether of us have hadde anye Farder to doe there wth, and ſo cravinge you^r hono^{rs} Favourable Conſtructions of oure proceſſinge herein wee humblie take oure leaves Plimouthe the 6th of Januarie 1596.

You^r good Lo^{pps} humblie at commaundemente /

HUMFREY FONNES FARD: GORGES.

Maiore. CHR: HARRIS.

W^m STALLENGE.

Add: To the righte honorable S^r Robert Cecill knight Principall Secretarie to her Ma^{ti}. End: 6 Jan. 1596. Mayo^r of Plymooth. S^r Far: Gorges. M^r Harrys. M^r Stalleng. to my M^r Phillip Curcyna. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 37/46.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND OTHERS
TO THE COUNCIL.

OURE humble duties unto you^r good Lo^{pps} Remembred. This lafte daye here arived Capten Legatt in a Galego⁵³³ Boate w^{ch} 8 daies past he tooke thre Leagues from Sezark upon the coste of Galizia he hathe broughte wth him two Spaniardes whose examina^cons wee do sende unto you^r Lo^{pps} herein closed, The parties we have thoughte meete to keepe here untell you^r Lo^{ppes} pleasures bee Farder knowne what shalbe donne wth them; As also howe these Charges shalbe defrayed for that Capten Legatt hathe delivered them over unto us. The faide Capten Legatt woulde willinglie have made his present repaire to the Corte, Butt findethe him selfe unable by reason of his greate travell in Retorninge home from the Coste of Galeza onelye wth two of his Companie, The two Spaniardes and a boye; Before his goinge forthe from hence wee gave him £10 towardes his Charge and Delivered you^r Lopp^s Instru^cons unto him for the performance of this service, But for so muche as he hathe lefte his owne Barke and Hazarded himselfe to Retorne wth these Advertisments his hope is by you^r good Lo^{pps} moſte honorable Favours to obtayne of her Ma^{ti} ſome better Rewarde; w^{ch} leavinge to you^r honores

Farder

⁵³³ The Galicians were called Galegos. Sezark is doubtleſſ Cifarga, a ſmall island off the westerly ſide of the mouth of the river in which the harbors of

Corunna and Ferrol are ſituated. In spelling the word the writer probably imitated the ſound of the Spanish as nearly as he could.

Farder Consideracons wee humblie take oure leave; Plimouth the 6th of Januarie 1596.

Your good Lordshippes humblie at commandme^t /

HUMFREY FONNES FARD: GORGES.

Maior. CHR: HARRIS.

W^m STALLENGE.

Add: To the righte honorable or verie good Lordes the Lo^s of her Ma^{tis} moste honorable Previe Counfell. End: 6 Jan: 1596. Mayo^r of Plymmothe. S^r Far: Gorges. M^r Harrys. M^r Stalleng. to y^r Lls. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 37/47.)

SIR F. GORGES AND MR. BAGGS TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE; my humble duetie remembred; perceaveinge by Cursinis supplication as also your honors letter, there hath been Complaynte made of the negligence of me and the rest in this matter of wheate, wherein hee hath donne us more wronge then by anye meanes he receaved cause from us; for there was noe more unladen, then by your honors firste letters wee receaved order for; And as concerninge the meafure of hit, his Factor muste make aunsware; for there was not anye man that intermedled in it, but him self, save that he Required me to be aided by some of my officers for that the skeppor seemed mutanus, And not to respect the au^thoritie that was fent./ Next, for the sale of it, hit was soulde in the markett at the best rate that it woulde yeilde wthowt anye price set on hit by us, but leaveing it to his factor to make his best; and the Corne beinge so ill Condicioned as it was. he hath noe reaſon to thincke, he shoulde receave anye great Loffe by felling

selling it after 10^o the busshell the mooste parte of hit beinge so bad, as the skipper did confesse he shoulde be forced to caste it over borde for the preservation of the rest; The effect of this hath been written by M^r Bagge unto Cursyn him self, as also M^r Bagge hath subscribed unto this as being mooste trewe./ for my owne parte I hope your honor is perswaded that I woulde not be so negligent of yo^r honors pleasure, and therefore doe humbly desire yo^r honors mooste assured opinion of me, unto whom I have and doe mooste unfaynedlye desire to shewe my love and duetiefull service./ And so I most humblie take my leave. From the Forte at Plymouth the 6 of January

Yo^r honors at Comaund /

FARD: GORGES.

JAMES BAGGE.

p^t script.

The particulars of the neewes of Capten Legot, your honor shall Receave in a generall letter unto their L^{ps} the copie whereof M^r Stallinge hath sent unto yo^r honor inclosed in his owne.

Add: To the Right honorable S^r Robert Cicill knight principale Secretarye to her Mat^{ie}. End: 6 Jan 1596 S^r Far. Gorges. Mr Bagge to my M^r concerning Phillip Curcyna. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 38/15.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND W. STAL-
LENGE TO THE COUNCIL.

OURE humble dueties unto youre good Lo^{pps} Remembred/
This laste daie here arived the Barke Pearce wherin Cap-
ten Croftes wente forthe havinge loste seaven of her men

W^{ch}

w^{ch} were overthrowne wth there Boate in the Bordinge of a Spanishe Carvell and lefte other Five aboarde a Bisken shippe laden wth Iron wherin the saide Barke Pearce and her Companye are to have there shares wth a shippe of Hampton and a Frenchemman of Rochell, But as we suppose the Frenchemen beinge the greater number in the prize have caried her for Rochell where there wilbe small hope to recover anye parte thereof, wee will forthe wth dischARGE the Barke and Companye that are come home in her and satisfie what shal be due unto them althoughe as yett we have not soulde anye parte of the goodes that was brought home by Capten Croftes, whereby to defraye the Charges thereof, nether cane we receave of the Customer that w^{ch} is oweinge for the victuallinge of her and the Carvell at there goinge forthe; As well by the m^r of this Barke as by others latelie here arived w^{ch} departed from the Coste of Galizia aboute 14 daies past, we understand that of the kinges Fleett there remayned at Feroll 140 sayle whereof 30 gallies and that there souldiers remayned lodged a Broad in the Countrye withein 30 leagues of Feroll where they have caused a greate dearthe of victualls and especiallie of Bread; That the sicknes Continuethe still amone those at Feroll, That the Adelantado⁵³⁴ hadde bene sente for by the kinge but excused his goinge by reason of his sickenes; That the kinge hathe Caused to be prepared at Lisborne 20 small Carvels to Joyne wth the reste of his Fleett. And as it was generallye reported the armye woulde be redie to departe in Aprill nexte; We daylie expec^te the Comminge of Capten Harper by whome we hope to receave more Certaine inteligence where

⁵³⁴ Don Martin de Padeglia.

where of you^r Lo: shalbe advertized; We have heere made staye of a Frencheman supposing him to be a spie but as yett cane finde nothinge wherby to prove the same, he is a man of a boute 30 yeares and departed from his dwellinge place (beinge as he faithe) neere unto Marcellias in Fraunce, aboute fower yeares past; From whence he wente to Geneva, From thence into Hungarie and so throughe Germanie he came into the low Countries, and thence to London where he arived aboute 13 monethes past, sethence w^{ch} tyme he hathe traveled the moste parte of Englande and wales along the sea coaste and is now come to this towne from Dartmouthe to seeke passage for his countrie; His apparell is verye Bare and monye he hathe nott anye but that w^{ch} is geven him, if upon Farder examina^{con} wee finde anye matter in him youre Lo: shalbe advertized thereof, But as yett he seemeth unto us not to be of Capacitie Fitt for anye suche service, Wee are daylie called on by those w^{ch} pretend intereste in the goodes brought home by Capten Croftes; and the shippes and companie of Spaniardes lye heere at greate charges, wherefore wee praye youre Lo: pleasures what Farder Course shalbe taken therein;

And so doe humblie take our leaves, Plimouthe the firste of Februarie 1596.

Youre good Lo^{pps} humble at Comman^dmente /

HUMFREY FONNES

FARD: GORGES.

Maiores.

W^m STALLENGE.

Add: For her Mat^{ies} affares. To the righte honorable oure verye good Lordes
 The Lo. of her Mat^{ies} moste honorable previe counsell. End: pr^{mo} Feb 1596.
 The Mayor of Plymmothe. S^r Fa: Gorges. M^r Stalleng. to y^r Lls. The
 Barke Pearce arrived wth y^e losse of 7 of her men in boording a Spanishe
 Carvell. A Frencheman stayed there and supposed to be a Spie. 1 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 38/22.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dutie to your Ho: remembred, whereas it pleased your hon: to commande that the reporter of the newes shoulde be sente upp it is so that he departed from hence towardes London Tenne dayes sythence to make sute for his entertaynemente for his voyage unto the Indies with S^r Frauncis Drake in the which action he was taken, so as M^r Mydeleton wylbe best able to satisfie your hon: pleasure in that behalfe; it pleased your ho: by your laste to geve me notice of leave graunted me for my repayer unto the Courte, but unto this present I have not seene it. humblie cravinge pardon for my boldnesse I humblie take my leave and doe hartelie praie for the increase of your ho: From the foarte this sixte of februarye 1596.

Yo^r ho: ever to be commanded / FARD: GORGES.Add: To the righte ho: S^r Roberte Ciffill knighte principal Secretarie to her Ma^{ty} at courte these. End: 6: Feb: 1596 S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r. 1-2 p.

(Cecil Papers 38/24.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL

My humble dutie unto yo^r hon: remembred of late there is arrived in Portesmouthe a flyboote taken by three men of warre on the coaste of spayne bounde for Lisborne laden wth wheate, Copper, and Cabells, and one of this three was the barke of Cap: Legates sente out by us wth order from your hon: for matter of intelligence at the charge of the owner himselfe; Cap: Sanders, M^r Stallenge and my selfe; nowe we humblie praie your honours favour towardes the bringer

bringer heereof Cap: Legatte; whome we have appoynted to solifete the whole for an indifferente course to be helde so as we may have that which belongeth unto us: and it is reason if your honour shall so thinke well of it, that Cap: Legatt should be permytted to have some previledge before the reste fithe he was fente foorth in her Ma^{ts} service and performed it accordinge unto his direction and by that favorable consideraⁿon others wilbe encouraged to be the more carefull to performe their duties in the like case humblie recommending it unto your ho: favorable consideraⁿon, and yo^r ho: unto the protection of th almighty I take my leave from the foarte the seventhe of February 1596.

Yo^r ho: ever to be commaunded / FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the Right ho: S^r Robert Ciffell knight principale secretarie to her Ma^{tie}. End: 7 Feb: 1596 S^r 'Far: Gorges to my M^r A Flye boate loaden wth wheat, Cables and Cupper, taken on y^e coaste of Spaine and brought into Portsmouth by three Englishe men of warre. By Cap^{en} Legatt. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 38/30.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND W. STAL-
LENGE TO THE COUNCIL.

OURE humble Duties unto youre good Lo:^{pps} remembred. This laste daye we receaved youre Lo: tres of the thirde hereof whereby we are Commaunded to fende upp the Pipe Bordes and Iron plates for hoopes unto M^r Quarles⁵³⁵ and M^r Darell, w^{ch} we meane to doe so soone as Convenient shippinge maye be hade for them, The reste of the goodes shalbe soulde to the moste value that canne be made of them, w^{ch} we thinke will not exceede the rates alredie sett downe

⁵³⁵ Afterwards Sir Robert Quarles, knighted at Newmarket, March 5th, 1607.

downe, butt rather lesse by reasoun of a nother Bisken shippe broughte in heere of late wth good store of the like Commodities;

Her Ma^{ties} thirde parte of the prize fente in by Capten Harper is folde accordinge to the Schedule we fente unto your Lo: Excepte the plankes w^{ch} we valued at 18^d and are folde for 2^s the planke, In the Bisken shippe we have placed Englishe mariners and doe allowe them for keepinge of her 14^s everie weeke;

Where as wee are Commaunded to fende awaye the mariners of the saide shippe into Fraunce and to fende upp the Spaniardes that were taken in her, It maye please you^r good Lo: there were broughte home in the saide prize 19 men and one boye, of w^{ch} there is one Frencheman and 17 Biskens all mariners. The other two were passengers, the one of them beinge a marchante and Owner of the moste parte of the goodes And the other a boye that wente for Cevill to seeke service, wherefore we praye you^r Lo: Farder derections whether we shall fend awaye onlie the Frencheman and fende upp all the reste of the Bisken mariners (or howe manye of them) and whether wee shall fende them upp by sea or lande; as also what shalbe done wth the Spanishe mariners that were fente home by Capten Harper and Capten Legatt;

And so do humblie take our leaves, Plimouthe the 13th of Februarie 1596.

You^r good Lo:^{pps} humblie at commandment /

HUMFREY FONNES

FARD: GORGES.

Maiores.

W^m STALLENGE.

Add: To the right honorable oure verie good Lordes The Lo: of her Ma^{ties} moste honorable previe Counsell. End: 13 Feb. 1596. Mayo^r of Plymmothe.

S^r Fa: Gorges. M^r Stalleng. to y^r Lls. 1 p.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXII. No. 88.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHTE HONORABLE: Yf I seeme to yo^r hono^r troblefome, for seekinge the obteyninge of a matter of Soe smale Consequens, Yet my hope is that I shall purchase a favorable constru^ccon: For that I desier to haue it expreſte in playne wordes what her Majesties pleafuer and your Lo: is, I shoulde doe at tymes of occaſon; Bie the vertue of whose Authoritie I shall take from my ſealfe all colour of excuse; Whereas otherwife I ſhall leave my ſealfe doutfull what to doe, eſpecially yf I be denied to receaue authoritie for the performce of noe more then I am bounde to diſchardge: And yf there be occaſon for me to uſe a Co^miſſion, Yt wilbe neceſſarie that I haue yt, yf none, yet not hurtefull (in my opinyon) yt ſhoulde be graunted: Befides for the wante of the neceſſarie enlardgemente of yt, I ſhall growe fearefull in what manner or how to proceede, for that I ſhall ymagin I am debarde from thoſe thinges the w^{ch} I am denied expreſte Authoritie for: For I beſeche yo^r honor to be aſſured, I will not willingly enterpriſe any thinge, more then I am able to ſhew co^miſſion for; And I am aſſured yt wilbe to late for me to ſende for one, when I ſhall haue occaſon of the uſe thereof: And agayne my creditt and reputacon wilbe thoughte to be smale, when it ſhalbe knownen I am not able to procuer thinges neceſſarie for my owne ſaſtie, after diſchardge of my bounden dutie: And ſoe may her Ma^{ties} ſervice be neglected, and my ſealfe ſcorned: More I ſhall haue ſmale hope my honorable freendes, will Juſtifie me in a matter not juſtifiable, when they delay me of their meaneſ

to

to secuer me in discharginge my dutie; Humbly referringe
yt to yo^r hono^{rs} favorable further^{ne}ce, I rest^e wth desier of
meanes to shew my sealf^e assuredly:/

Yo^r hono^{rs} at Co^mmaunde/ FARD. GORGES.

From HANWORTHE⁵³⁶ the xxvijth of Marche:/

End: To the righte honorable S^r Roberte Cicill knight principall Secretary to
her Majestie thefe:/ 28 March 1597. S^r Fer: Gorges to my M^r Touching
the explaning and enlardg^{ne} of his Co^mission./

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXII. No. 111.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dewtie remembred. May it please yo^r Hono^r
to be advertised that here is lately arryved one Cap: Auf-
tyn of this towne, whoe came of the Coste of Spaine the
thirde of Aprill and of the Burlinges;⁵³⁷ he mett wth Cap: Croftes, whoe deliuered him certeyne Spannyshe and portin-
gall letters, wth a letter unto me, w^{ch} I haue caused to be
perufed, but can finde nothinge in them; By his letter it
seemethe he hath not as yet byn able to bringe that to passe
that he desirethe, he dothe alsoe write, that he harde only of
Fortie eighte sayle of shippes that are att Faroulde and that
there are twelue galleyes to come from Lyshborne; & Cap-
teyne Austyn himsealf reporteth that he understoode by
certeyn Fisher men (that he toke of Lyshborne); That there
was greate sicknes in the army, and geñally greate scarcity
in

⁵³⁶ This was one of the temporary
residences of the Queen, and Gorges
had probably followed the Court there.
It is a pleasant drive of a couple of
hours southwest from London.

⁵³⁷ The Barlenga, a cluster of rocky
islands in the Atlantic, three leagues
westerly from the coast of Portugal,
were fortified and furnished good an-
chorage for ships.

in the Countrie, but in all places greate preperacons and provicon made for a voiage, but whether or unto what place, it was not knownen, but generally they gaue yt out, For Fraunce; more that for c^rteyne there weare twelue galleyes departed from Lyshborne laden wth munycon and other provicon to goe to Faroulde,⁵³⁸ and by the way there weare twoe of them Caste away, and not one man faved that was in them: Further the saide Cap: reportethe that there weare seventy sayle in the Groine⁵³⁹ and Feroulde: Here is lately arrived a French man of whose cominge there hath byn longe fense notice given by mchaunt of S^t John de Luse⁵⁴⁰ unto Marchaunts of this towne, to haue byn one that hath undertaken to bringe certeyne intelligens of the strenghte of this place, But as yet there is noe notes taken of him; But by my nexte to yo^r Hono^r you shall understande more: I haue accordinge to yo^r co^maunde examyned wth M^r Maio^r⁵⁴¹ the Portingall lately aryvede but can finde nothinge more, then by his examyna^mon sent to yo^r Hono^r from M^r Maio^r, for the shipp we haue preceded accordinge to yo^r Hono^rs direc^mon; Soe wth my
humble

⁵³⁸ Ferrol was at this time a little fishing town, but possessed of an excellent harbor. It is in the Province of Galicia to the north of Portugal, and is now an important marine arsenal.

⁵³⁹ Corunna, the French Corogne, corrupted by the English to Grogne, is a fortified port of Spain, about three hundred miles northwest of Madrid. It was from here that the Armada failed to conquer England in 1588.

⁵⁴⁰ Saint-Jean-de-Luz is a town in France at the mouth of the river Nivelle. It was formerly an important port.

⁵⁴¹ The mayor to whom Sir Ferdi-

nando refers was Humphrey Founes. He was mayor of Plymouth at the time of the destruction of the Spanish Armada, and was re-elected in 1596. His family tomb is in the old church of St. Andrews. It is recorded as remarkable that during his last term of office "wheat was sold for 30s. bushell plym^o measure, and barley twelve," and that an order was made "for the regulation of fishwomen," who had "unduly multiplied." *Vide Plimouth Memoirs*, collected by James Yonge, 1684, edited by R. N. Worth, F.G.S., Plymouth, 1876, pp. 18, 20.

humble duty and hartie prayers to God for the increse of
yo^r hono^r I ende from the Forte att Plymo^{uth} the xjth of
Aprill 1597./

Yo^r hono^{rs} att Comaunde/ FARD: GORGES.

End: To the Righte honorable S^r Roberte Cicill knighte Chefe Secretarie to
her Maiestie these. xj^{mo} April 1597./ S^r Fa: Gorges to my M^r — from
Plymme the Certen Spanishe aduises dd to Cap^{en} Austyn by Cap^{en} Crofts. A
fuspicious Frenchman lately arryved there./

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXII. No. 144.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dutie remembred these are to giue Your hono^r
to understande that I haue caused a smale Penyce of my
owne to be made readie to goe directly for the groyne, and
Faroule, and I proteste unto God yf I had leaue I coulde
be well contented, to goe in her my sealf, for that I see not
that don that in my pore conceipte, I thinke fitt shoulde be
don; and I am thorowly perswaded yt is the office of a man
of reputacion in that the tyme is as it is: For there can be
nothinge more dangerous to our estate then securitie, the
w^{ch} infec^{on} our Nation hath ever byn Subjecte unto, and
that procedinge from the wante of intellygens from men of
Judgmente and reputacion and I never yet prized my lyfe or
estate soe highe, as I woulde negle^{te} to doe that the w^{ch} in
my consciens was fitt to be don for my contries good. Thus
much I am boulde to signifie unto your Ho: Whome I haue
in my pticular byn soe much behouldinge unto, and att
whose comaundem^t I woulde be moste willinge to undertake
foe

soe lawdable an enterprize. Referringe yt unto your honor wth desier of acceptnēce of my service Yf yt may be thoughte profitable or necessary: I humbly take my leaue From the Forte att Plymothe the 28th of Aprill 1597.

Your hon^r Ashoured to Comaund / FARD. GORGES.

End: For her Majesties Affaires: To the Righte Honorable S^r Robte Cecyll knighte principall secretary to her Ma^{tie}/ 28 Apr: 1597. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r: A Barke of his ready to goe to Sea./

(Cecil Papers 51/10.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE LORD HIGH ADMIRAL AND
SIR R. CECIL.

My houmbl dutey remembred y^e 19th of this instante I reseved this Leter herin closed, fente unto me by S^r Franfes Godolfolim,⁵⁴² to be convayed unto your Lls nother neues her is not any, but genarally exsepsions taken that all manor of Charge shoulde be imposed upon the forcnores and the thin ores souferid to goo fre, and the gentillmen do resoullfe presently to seginefey theyer grefes unto your llo anewe, may your llo, be plesed to to thinke howe they may be aunfored, so as ther maye be no delaye or hindranse of hur Magestes servis when it shall comme unto it: by my nexte your ho: shall her what is doune conferninge the 600 men to be leved in deven and Cornawell: Soo praiinge for the in crese of your honores I houmblly

⁵⁴² Sir Francis Godolphin was a member of Parliament for Cornwall in the thirty-first year of the reign of Elizabeth, and also Governor of the island of Scilly. He is spoken of as a man of religious zeal, upright and prudent in affairs. Charles I. granted him a patent for coining silver in Cornwall.

houmblly take my leve from bukeland this present beinge
the 19 of May 1597.

Your llo moste houmblly to be comanded /

FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add: for her Maties speciall affaires. To the right ho: my approved good Lorde, the Lo: highe admirall, & the right ho: S^r Robert Cecyll knight principall secretarie to her matie give theise at y^e Court, hast hast, hast, hast hast. From Buckland ⁵⁴³ at eleven of the Clocke in the forenoone. Fard. Gorges. End: 19 May 1597 S^r Far: Gorges to my Mr. 1 p.

[Postmasters' endorsements.]

At Ashburton at 6 of the clocke. At Exeter paste 10 of the clocke in the night. At Honiton at i of the clock in the morning. Recevyd att ckarne* 6 of y^e clocke or paste mornyng ye 20 of Maye. R^d at Sherborn halfe an hour after 8 of the clock the 20th of Maye the forenone. Shafstore** at 12 of the clocke. Sarum att 3 a clocke in after none being fry daye. [torn] Recefed att Harfarbregg† [att] 12 of the [clock] att nig[ht]. Ander†† at 7 of the clocke in the afternone beinge Fridaie. At Bassingstock at 10 of the clok at nyght.

* Crewkerne. ** Shaftesbury. † Harsfordbridge. †† Andover.

(Cecil Papers 54/95.)

[*Draft.*] THE LORD ADMIRAL, THE LORD CHAMBERLAIN AND SIR R. CECIL, TO GEORGE FENNER AND SIR F. GORGES.

GOOD GEORG FENNER There is now a meanes for you to do her M^y some notable service and for y^e low conty men to free y^{em} selfs of these Gally w^{ch} are prinespally destined for ther grave, you shall understand y^t there rideth in the bay of Hoggs nere She bank⁵⁴⁴ 6 Gallies, on Monday night they rode close abord the shore the wind being full South west

⁵⁴³ A post town a few miles north of Plymouth.

France, and on the English Channel, about seven leagues east from Cape la

⁵⁴⁴ Cherbourg, on the north coast of Hogue.

west but blew so great a Gale as they durst not come on, we have alredy directed the shypps in y^e Narro Seas to ly for them as well as the wind and water will permitt but this wind standing as it is our hope must be in y^t w^{ch} shalbe don from the westward, And therfore we do in her M^s Name require you to take y^e benefitt hereof and to bring wth you any shypps y^t you shall find there Flemings or English w^{ch} are fitt for such a service and If ye find y^e Treulove take her wth you howsoever she is, you must therefore let y^e ad: of those Flemings y^t are there, understand y^t If now the shall not pay all respects as you and atend this voiage the Stats shall have occasion to condemn them of great necligence for the Q. hath written to them y^t she hath now sent you and them word of this and she is sure y^t they will not mislike anything w^{ch} they shall do upon this occasion by her direction, we pray you therfore to do your best for this, and to make all y^e shyft you can to torne out, and If it shold be so, y^t y^e cold gett no other shyp without tarrying so, as to loose oportunity, yet come away yourself with yo^r owne shyp and y^e Trewlove and y^e Pynnace. Tarry not good Georg but do y^e best you can for we wold be very gladd y^t these Bagages might be catched or canvased, Assure yo^r self y^t yo^r shyp and y^e Trewlove will beate y^{em} If there were no more to asist you. And thus in all hast we end you shall also know y^t there are 3 or 4 small Frenchmen or Scots men in their company w^{ch} car[ry] their victuails, let no such pass unsearched for they have Spaniards abord though they be be fr: Bottoms.

G. Fennor. you are a wise man and have experience how to use stratagems, It will not be amiss If you think

think good to lay a Bayte for them in this fort, yt some League before you some Bark may be sent, and take in her Ordonance as thogh she were no man of warr, w^{ch} peradventure may intise them from y^e shore to come of and take her but this we do but remember unto you leaving all things to your discretion, Expedition is now all, and Resolution, If you lyght on y^{em}, you will find good store of Treasur in y^{em}.

In Cecil's hand.

End: 29 August 97. Minuit, to M^r George Fenner and S^r Ferd. Gorges from my l: Admirall my lo: Chamberlain ⁵⁴⁵ and M^r Secretary. 4 pp.

(Cecil Papers 175/112.)

SIR F. GORGES TO LORD BURGHLEY.

My humble duty unto yo^r Lo: remembred; in my lafte I signified unto yo^r Ho: of the order taken by my Lo: of Essex, for the victualinge and furnishinge of a smale Pynace to attende her Ma^{ts}: service under S^r: John Gylberte,⁵⁴⁶ the w^{ch} as I signified unto your Lo: was don upon my owne Creditt, and now S^r John beinge retorne and as yt semeth his

⁵⁴⁵ Henry De Vere, Earl of Oxford. Though dissolute in his youth, he became one of the most distinguished men of his time. He was one of that noble band who accompanied the heroic Sir Horace Vere against the Spaniards under Spinola. From over-exertion and exposure in leading an assault upon the Spanish works, he contracted a fever from which he died.

⁵⁴⁶ This Sir John was the son of Sir Humphrey Gilbert and brother of Ralegh Gilbert, one of the Popham Colony; hence the nephew of the Sir John mentioned in note 491, *antea*. "He prac-

tised arms agreeable to the brave spirit of his ancestors: Was held an Expert and ancient soldier even in his younger years wherein he expired; was taken away when he gave not only hope but full assurance of great sufficiency to do his prince and country service." He died July 5th, 1608, and was buried in Marldon Church on the 19th. He died just as the last supply ship was sailing for the Sagadahoc, and the news of his death was borne by her to his brother Ralegh; which was the final blow to the hopes of the Colony. *Vide* note 109, *antea*.

his vi^ctualls spente: I woulde gladly know yo^r Lo: pleasuer whether yee or noe she shoulde longer be continued, upon her Ma^{ts}: charges otherwise that both shee and her men may be dismiste, wthout puttinge her Ma^{te}: to any farther charge, and I doe agayne humblye pray yo^r Lo: order for paymente of her vi^ctualls, her mens wages, and her tunnedge, and doe beseeche yo^r Lo: to consider shee hath loste the opertunytye of her voiage, for the w^{ch} shee was provided havinge spente twoe monethes vi^ctualls before shee was taken for her Ma^{ts}: service, my estate is not able to forbeare yt Longer I proteste unto yo^r Lo: wth out doinge those that gave me creditt greate wronge; For the Flemynge (broughte in by S^r John) shee is taken to be of good valew, whereof I doubte not, but he hath himselfe att lardge acquaynted yo^r Lo: I sende yo^r Lo: alsoe the number of armes, lefte by my Lo: att his departuer, shewinge the particulers from whome they weare receaved, they are much ympayred and many of them very unserviceable, and I woulde gladly see them put in reparac^{ons}, but I woulde know how to be repayed, for I finde yt soe harde a matter to recover what I lay out for the contrye as I am almoste discoraged; as for newes here is not any fence tharivall of M^r Ofburne, as sone as any shall arrive I will adverteice yo^r Ho: of yt: Even soe wth my hartye prayers for yo^r Lo: good health I humbly take my leave; from the Forte att Plymothe the 27th of September 1597.

Yo^r Lo: humbly att comaunde/ FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the righte Ho: my very good Lo: the Lo: highe Treasorer of Englande.

End: 27 [torn off] S^r Far: Gorges to my Lo: Whether his Pynnesse shall contynue any longer in her Ma^{ts} charge. Inventorie of y^e armes dd him by y^e E of Essex. 1 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 56/10.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble duty unto yo^r Ho: remembred: may yt
please you to understande, this day here arived a man of S^t
John de Leuse whose name is martyn Ogarfabal, whoe re-
porteth that eleven dayes fence beinge in Bayonnde in
Galesey⁵⁴⁷ there came a spanish souldier from Farould:,
whose newes was, that their fleete consistinge 120: fayle
greate and smale, weare gon from thens to the Groyne,
where they remayne all readye to sett fayle, but whether to
goe noe man knoweth some reporte to seeke our fleete,
some for Irelande others for Inglande:⁵⁴⁸ in the fleete there
is many lande souldiers, but what number he likewise
knoweth not, they have made greate proviſon of lyme that
they carrie wth them, alsoe he reporteth that they have many
horses and Oxen, wth them, the caufe as the souldier re-
porteth whye they come unto the Groyne, was for that they
coulde not gett out of Faroulde wth a southerly winde: How
trew this is, or what liklyhoode yt hath, I referr the con-
ſideraſon of yt, unto yo^r wiſdom and better knowledge:
Knowinge that you know that yt is better not to fay, what
they will doe, but what they may doe, and to prevente what
is

⁵⁴⁷ Bayona in Galicia.⁵⁴⁸ The English fleet under the com-
mand of Essex, Howard, and Ralegh
had sailed from Plymouth on the 17th
of August to strike a decisive blow at
Spain, and at this time was beating its
way homeward without having achieved
the success which had been anticipated
for it. Spain was marshalling her forces

and equipping her fleets for defensive
and offensive operations, which prop-
erly kept the English upon the alert,
and gave rise to constant rumors of in-
vasion. While the Spanish king con-
templated another attack upon England,
he was not in a condition at this time
to make it, as Sir Walter Ralegh con-
tended.

is possible, rather then to leave yt att had I wiste, pardon me I besech you, my meanyng is good, and my hartes prayer ys that all may be well; wth a desier that yt will please you to comaunde me, in what my service may shew my affe~~c~~con, wth unfeyned assuraunce that I am alwayes:

Yo^r Ho: humblye att comaunde:/ FARD: GORGES.

From the fort by PLYMOTH the 11th of October 1597.

Add. To the righte Ho: Sr Roberte Cycyll knighte principall Secretary to her Mat^{ie}. End: 1597 11 Oct. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r Spanishe advises delivered by one of S^t Io: de Luz. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 56/39.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dutie unto yo^r Ho: remembred; by yo^r Ho: letter of the 16th of October, I am required to see M^r Osborne accommodated wth all thinges necessary to hasten him unto the sea; the w^{ch} accordinge unto my bounden dutie I am readye to performe and have to that ende procured them to bespeak and cause all thinges to be provided in a readines attendinge only yo^r Ho: annswere unto their letter for their dire~~c~~con how mony shall be receaved, for my owne parte I proteste I have yt not besides I am in a manno^r discoraged, for that I have soe often disbussed my mony and I rest yet unpayed, wherefore I am enforced to be a troblesome suter unto yo^r Ho: to be my meanes for recovery thereof, and doe refer the mysfarable grife thereof unto yo^r Ho: wise considera~~c~~on; I have written two letters unto my lo: yo^r Ho: father, but can receave noe annswere, where or from whome I shall receave yt; I referr my sealfe unto

unto yo^r ho: from whome I hope for ease, and unto whome I will ever remayne unfaynedly

Yo^r. ho: to comaunde/ FARD: GORGES.

If this wind houlde in this quarter I beceche your ho^s to remember that our frendes will have hongrey belles: & it wer to be wished: that they had on 3 or 4 flybotes wth vitalles, to hellpe them home wth all.

The body of this letter by amanuensis; the postscript in Gorges' hand.

Add: To the right Ho: S^r Roberte Cycyll knight principall secretary to her Ma^{tie}: End: 20 October 1597 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my M^r. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 56/44.)

SIR F. GORGES AND C. HARRIS TO SIR R. CECIL.

YOUR Ho: shall by this bringer be adverticed the particulers of what I should write unto yo^r Ho: of att lardge notwthstandinge I thought yt fitt to give an accoumpt what I purpose prefently to doe in dischardge of my dutie in this place the w^{ch} is instantly to put into the Islande 200: men wth victualls for 14: dayes, to take in 200: more into the Forte out of the Countrie Makinge for that place, the like provi^{con}, yf yt be her ma^{ts}: gracious pleafuer not to make allowaunce of this, that I may prefently by yo^r ho: receave notice of yt, that they may agayne be discharged, and the provi^{con} be redelivered, likewise I doe take in all the ordinance and muny^{con} that I can possible, and how yt alsoe pleafeth, her Ma^{tie} to make allowaunce of yt, I pray yo^r ho: I may understande wth warr for what I have don, or shall doe upon this neceffitie this adverticem^{ts} I have fente unto thofe
of

of authoritie in Devon and Cornewall, I hope I shall not neede to write any more but doe humbly refer the reste unto yo^r ho: wisdome: And soe wth remembraunce of my humble duty I humbly take my leave, From the Forte by Plymoth this 23th of October 1597:

Yo^r ho: humbly att comaunde/

FARD: GORGES.

CHR. HARRIS.

I have fente yo^r ho: his examyna~~c~~on wth his owne hande writinge.

Add: To the righte ho: S^r Roberte Cycyll knight principall secretary to her Ma^{tie}. End: 1597 23 Oct. S^r Fa: Gorges to my M^{rs} Orders by him taken for Renforcing the Fort and Iland upon an allarom of th approach of the Spanishe Fleet. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 175/121.)

LORD THOMAS HOWARD,⁵⁴⁹ LORD MOUNTJOY,⁵⁵⁰ SIR WALTER RALEGH,⁵⁵¹ AND SIR F. GORGES, TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.

MAY YT PLEASE YOUR GOOD Lo^p: We are to advertise yo^r Lo^p: thus much at this present, First that whereas before we were jeliouse of Certeyn shippes that lay of of Famouthe and

⁵⁴⁹ Lord Thomas Howard, created Earl of Suffolk in 1603. He obtained considerable influence at court by his services in discovering the Gunpowder Plot, and was made Chancellor at Cambridge in 1613, and the following year Lord High Treasurer. He died May 28th, 1626.

⁵⁵⁰ Charles Blount, sixth Lord Mountjoy and Earl of Devonshire, was one of the commanders in the fleet which defeated the Spanish Armada. He was a man of popular qualities, a soldier and scholar; but like so many who basked

in the sunshine of power, of impure moral life. For years he lived openly with Penelope, sister of the Earl of Essex, who had abandoned her husband, the Earl of Warwick, in order to live with him. To this woman, by whom he reared a family of children, he was married a year before his death by William Laud, his chaplain, afterwards the famous Archbishop. He died in 1606.

⁵⁵¹ Sir Walter Ralegh had just returned from the expedition against Spain, already spoken of in a previous note, and his enemies were actively engaged

and the Lizard⁵⁵² we are now better enformed that they were ether English men, Scotts or Flemings as may appeare, unto yo^r Lo:^p by the incloſed. Farther if there were any remaynder of the Spanish Fleete hovering uppon owre Coast we are of opinion that this last tempeſtioſe night hath dispersed them.

We are besides to lett yo^r Lo:^p know that the Admiral Vice Admiral and the rest of the Flemish Squadron are gonn for the low Cuntries wth out owre privitie. Laſtly, (no apprehenſions or feares that have any greate foundation re-mayning here amongſt us) we entreat yo^r Lo:^p to use all Convenient haſt for owre deliverie from this place and to ſignifie unto us her M^{ties} pleasure what ſhe will have donn wth her ſhipps. of w^{ch} theare wilbe little neceſſitie here and (in owre opinions) it is tyme for them to be in theare winter harbor for the repayring of theire deſtresses:

So attending from yo^r Lo:^p a diſpatch Concerning theſe poynts and all other particularities w^{ch} yo^r Lo:^p ſhall thinck needfull we humbly take owre leaves.

Yo^r Lo:^{ps} humbly to be Commaunded /

T. HOWARD.

C. MOUNTJOYE.

W. RALEGH.

FARD: GORGES.

From PLIMOUTHE this firſt of November 1597.

It

engaged in fomenting trouble between him and Essex, to whom this joint letter is addressed. The details, however, of this accomplished ſoldier, ſtatesman, and ſcholar's life are familiar to all. Sir Walter called Cecil's attention to this joint letter in a private note written from

Plymouth, and ſaid, "we are here made madd with intricate affaires and want of means."

⁵⁵² The Lizard is a prominent head-land on the Corniſh coaſt, and the moſt ſoutherly point of England.

It may please yo^r Lo:^p to be particularly putt in minde of the Prizes of the land souldiers of the Spanish prisoners.

We are dispatching wth all haſt . 2 . or 3 Pinnasses toward the Coast of Spayne to lern what is become of the Spanish Fleete. We heare nothing of S^t Andrew.

Add. For her Ma^{ties} eſpetiall affayres. To the right honorable owre verie good Lord the Earle of Effex Lord General of her Ma^{ties} Armie and Fleete haſt for lyfe . for lyfe haſt . haſt for lyfe.⁵⁵³ T. Howard. C. Mountjoye. At Plimouthe the firſt of November 11 of the clock in the forenoone. Endorſed : 1 November 1597 at Plymmouth L. Thom. Howard L. Mountjoy. S^r W. Raleighe. S^r Fer. Gorge. Advertisments from ſea to y^e E. of Effex. 1 p.

[Postmasters' Receipts.]

Aſhburton have a nore* upon — of the clocke in the after nowne. Exeter paste 10 in the night. Receved at Hunyton ** one after mydenight the ſecond of Novembere. [torn] ockerne after 10 morning halfe anoer — Receved Sherborne halfe a nour paſt 9 of the cloke in the morninge. R at Andever the ſecond of November at ſix a clock at nighte. Baffingſtock at 9 clock [torn off].

* Half an hour. ** Honiton.

(Cecil Papers 56/III.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.

MOSTE HO: Your Lo: have underſtoode from the Lls: what they have don — whereby you may finde them doubtfull what to doe, for they are of an opinyon that the ſtayeinge of the ſhippes heere is to ſmale purpose or none att all, they

⁵⁵³ These despatches were ſent by ſpecial messengers who had to ride from Plymouth to London with all poſſible ſpeed. If they excelled in making quick time they were rewarded; hence theſe messengers were emulous of diſtinc-

tion. Some of the direccons written on despatches of this age are forcible, as, "Haste! Haste! Poſte Haste! Ryde villin Ryde! ffor yor lyfe, ffor yor lyfe, ffor yor lyfe!"

they bringe but few weake and unfurnished of all thinges, and to goe from hence they dare not wth out order from your Lo^s: , w^{ch} beinge confidered yt can not be unneceſſary they weare appoyned to goe to the place where yt shalbe thoughte fitt they shalbe repayred, for to lye heere unto noe purpose is but expence of chardge and losſe of tyme; and doubtlesſe in my opinyon (under yo^r lo: Correc~~con~~on, you shall heere the Spanyardes will repayer themſeavles before they put unto our coaſte agayne the w^{ch} will requier three weekes after theyre retorne to theyre harbors, in the meane tyme your Lo: may take order for the eſtabliſhinge of thinges fitt for defence, takinge the advantage of the tyme, and oportunytye for makinge of new proviſion:

Yt hath byn in councell largely diſcourſed on of the advantage our ſhippes have over theyres, and yt was concluſed by the twoe ſeamen, they weare as likely to beate us as we them, when we weare in our beſte trymes, the w^{ch} beinge confidered yt wilbe founde neceſſary not to much to truſte to that anncyente opynyon of the Queenes ſhippes, but to make neceſſary prepaſons for defence by lande:

For theſe partes as far as I have authoryty, I will promiſe the obſervaunce of yo^r lls: direc~~con~~ons, and yf there be comiſſion graunted me that I be not ſubjecte unto other mens wills whoe hath neyther judgm^t nor experyence, yf I fayle in diſcharginge the duty and office of a ſouldier, I will ransome the penaſty wth the losſe of my lyfe:

For the preſente untill more proviſons of lodgiſges be made in the Iſlande I will take order (yf the oulde companyes be to ſtaye heere) that they be lodged in Plymoth

and Stonehouse,⁵⁵⁴ from whence they shall every nyghte com to make guarde by single companyes, wher yt shalbe thoughte moste fitt:

The tropes of the countrye I discharged ymediatly upon the landinge of the low countrye men:

As for munycon and artillery I shall not neede to remember yo^r lo: any more how necessary yt is this place shoulde be thorowghly furnished, but doe refer yt unto yo^r Lo: wisdome: yt was wisched upon receipte of yo^r lo: that some of these shippes mighte rune of the Coaste, yf per-adventure thosse that ridd under S^t Ellens shoulde wth an Esterly winde put of before the S^t Andrew,⁵⁵⁵ should recover them, but yt is not don for that yt was not comaunded: soe wth remembrance of my humble duty, I take my leave of your lo: From the Forte by Plymoth: this 6th of November 1597.

Your Lor^s humbly at Cummaund duringe liffe,
FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the right ho: my moste assured good Lo: the Earle of Effexe generall of her ma^{ties} forces: give these: End: 6 Novembr. 1597 S^r Ferdinando Gorge to my Lo: of Effex. 1 1-4 pp.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXV. No. 41.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO: I haue written unto theyre Ll: such newes as hath come unto me, what lyklyhoode of truth yt hath I leaue unto your Ho: graue Wisdom and better knowledge, but

⁵⁵⁴ Stonehouse is a suburb of Plymouth between it and Devonport.

cent expedition, and, as Ralegh wrote to Cecil, in "forsibell weather—spent her

⁵⁵⁵ The *Saint Andrew* was one of the great Spanish ships taken in the re-

mayntopmaste."

but howsoever yt is not (in my pore opynyon) amyffe to doubtē as much, neyther doth yt carry any greate unlikly-hoode; for yet there doth not goe any reporte of other proviſons or settled course taken in moſte of theſe places for the avoydinge of confewſons and diſcontentes, the w^{ch} (under your Ho: correſcon be yt ſpoken) is geñally a thinge much muſtered att, and by ſome that doth know and greve to thiſke what reſtaunce will be made wth a confewſed multytude unexperyenced, wthout eyther Capⁿ or officer or any other meanes belonginge unto an army, that ſhould make hedd agaynſte an invadinge ememy, wth an army practiced, and diſciplined, as alſoe Royally provided of all thinges that can be ymagined to be fitt for ſuſh an attempte: I leauē the whole to be conſidered of by your Ho:, and doe humbly craue pardon for my bouldnes, gevinge moſte humble thankes for Yo: honorable care and favor in procuraſe my warrante for my Checkes: and reſtinge ever more to be diſpoſed of att:

Your Ho: Coſaunde: FARD: GORGES.

From the forte the 5th of December 1597.

End: To the right ho: S: Roberte Cycill knight principall Secretary to her highnes. S: Ferdinando Gorge to y^e Lords. 1597. 5 Decem. S: Far: Gorges to my M:

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXV. No. 42.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

I THOUGHTE yt my duty to giue your Ll: notice of my retorne from famouth: but doe leauē the reportes of the particulers of our opynyons accordinge unto your Ll: diſreſſons

reccons unto S^r Nickas Parker⁵⁵⁶ his retorne the w^{ch} wilbe wth as much speede as may be:

Heere is a reporte by those that cometh from the South wardes that there is, an Embargo geñally thorow Spayne, and all the marryners that they can gett they fende to farould: & the Groyne: and farther yt is thought they will presently be in a readynes to put out agayne unto the Sea, for the Adelantado (as they say) beinge ympatiēte of his misfortune doth make all the haste that he can possible, by all the meanes he is able; and resolues to put out althoughe he leauē some of his greate shippes behinde, the w^{ch} weare soe weather beaten as they can not convenyently be soe fodenly repayred;

farther: that yt is thoughte that theire purpose is, that the army that doth come out of Spayne shall descende upon some of these westerne partes, but where yt is not knownen, And that they make accoumpte the Cardinall⁵⁵⁷ will be able to sett a shoare in the Easte: and moreover that they are Asured of some freendes in the North, the w^{ch} they know will put one armes for theyre ayde; When these twoe armys are knownen to be a shoare: And as for Irelande they are assured of, for they say when all this hurly Burlye shalbe in

⁵⁵⁶ Sir Nicholas Parker was the son of Thomas Parker, Esq., of Ratton in Sussex. He was married three times: first to Jane, daughter of Sir William Courtney, of Devonshire; seconldly, to Elizabeth, daughter of John Baker, Esq.; and thirdly, to Catherine, daughter of Sir John Temple, Baronet. He was a man of great energy, and conspicuous in the military affairs of the reigns of Elizabeth and James. He was

engaged in the wars on the continent with Gorges, and was knighted for gallant conduct while in the Netherlands, by Lord Willoughby, in 1598. He died March 9th, 1619, leaving a numerous family.

⁵⁵⁷ Albert, Cardinal Archduke of Austria, son-in-law of Philip II. of Spain, by whose will he became sovereign of the Netherlands. He died in 1633.

in Inglande, we can fende noe supplyes thether and for those that are there, the Erle wilbe able to torne them oute at his pleafuer, thus your Ll: see, they haue made theyre reckoninge before theyre ofte; What lyklyhoode or taste of truth this hath I leaue unto yo^r Ll: better knowledges and graue Wifdomes: But under your Ll: corec~~c~~ons I thinke yt my duty to say thus much (as knowinge what I saye) yf God had not prevented them this laste tyme, they woulde wthoute resistaunce haue performed theyre designem^t upon these partes; for the reste I can say nothinge; what the wantes are I refer unto the reporte of S^r Walter Rawleighe whoe hath a note thereof under my hande accordinge unto your Ll: pleafuers in that behaulfe :

The Cap.^{ns} that are heere hath entreated me agayne to remember your Ll: of them that some certeyne course may be taken for the pay of theyre Weekly Sendinges, as alsoe for apparrell for their souldiers, whoe are exceedinge pore, and likewise a supply of armes, cheefly in that I doe presently entende, (yf yt shall stande wth your Ll: likinges) to call them unto duty, although yt can yll be before some provi~~c~~ons be made for fieringes and lodginges, and other necessaryes; For all w^{ch} I humbly pray your Ll: order for; for the Cap^s hath playnely tould me, that they thinke yt a very harde course that men shoulde be comaunded to duty before theyre provi~~c~~ons be made; What your Ll: pleafuers is in this behaulfe I desier to know att your Ll: beste leafuers: And soe wth remembraunce of my humble dutye I humbly take my leaue from the forte by Plymoth this 5th of december 1597./

Your Ll: humbly att comaunde / FARD: GORGES.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXV. No. 44.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO: it may apere by the reporte of Cap: Legate that ther is liklihod that the Spanerde do intende to pute this winter unto the sea agayne for other wayse they oulde drawe theyer shipes in to fareull, being a safer and a esior harbor then the Groyne be sides theye oulde disembarke theyer Land soulderers to sweten theyer shipes and refreshe the men if they wer resoulfed of the tim they ould stay there agayne they oulde not make such haste for providing themselfes wth botes, for der⁵⁵⁸ the generall imbergo of all shipinge to furnish them selfes wth marenors and the haftning of all provisions and sendinge of it the ther all the which is confirmed by the report of Allfonfo deshesfa a portugall that he hath brought wth him when if it shall plese your ho: may be fente upe./

It semeth the gent man hath taken grete paynes in this jerney for he hath tyrde out his company as well as his selfe and now to make them amenes he hath disbursed unto them theyre litle payes, in hope for so I asheured him he shoulde by your ho: menes reseve it agayn at london wth good fatesfaxfion for his honest and paynfull indefor wher for I be fech you to that Confederrasion may be had for the in coreging of him or other upon the like ocaſiones and you shall find it both profitabl for her Majesty and to for your selfe — Euen so I humbly take my leaue from the forte By Plimouth this 7th of desember.

Your lo: humbly at Comaund / FARD: GORGES.

End: To the righte ho: S^r Roberte Cycyll knighte principall secretary to her highnes: December: 1597. S. Fardinando Gorges to my M^r concerninge the reporte of Capt: Legate.

558 That is, farther.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXV. No. 45.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

I HAUE sente your Ho: herewth my drafte of falmouth, and I besech you to beare wth the rudnes of yt, It is as neere as I can remember the trew manno^r and scituaⁿon of the place, for the better dire^ccon of your Ho: understandinge of yt, I haue signified the place by letters, as yt may apeere, and written my reas ons of them, And in the other greater plott, I haue sett downe the manno^r of the fortificaⁿon, & the place (in my opynion) where yt should stande, and upon what confideraⁿon :/

To fortefie an other place (savinge S^t Maufe Castle ⁵⁵⁹) is to noe purpose, for those twoe beinge made stronge and of receipte, fitt to conteyne the power of the countrye, and furnished wth those proviⁿons, necessary for such places, the harbor wilbe sufficiently defended from the enymyes posse sion Yt is now the [most] dangerous place that ever I saw, and the worste provided for (: Yf the enymye shoulde descende there before these defences be made; I proteste I doe not see (and yet I doe assuer my sealfe I doe understande somthinge) how wthout greate difficulty they wilbe gotten out agayne: Yf yt shall please your Ho: to com aunde me any thinge els, You shall ever finde me:

Your Ho: most humbly att comaunde:/

FARD: GORGES.

From the forte this 8th of December 1597:

End: To the right ho: S^t Roberte Cycyll knight principall secretary to her highnes. 8 Dec: 1597. S^t Ferdinando Gorge to my M^r Concerning the plott of falmouth.

(State

⁵⁵⁹ This is one of the old fortresses harbor of Falmouth on the Cornish erected to defend the entrance to the coast.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXV. No. 55.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YOURE HO: Heere ys lately arived a ser-vante of Anthony Goddardes a merchaunte of this towne, whoe was taken in a smale barke of his maſt^{rs} that wente out of this harbor wth the fleete, att my lo: of Effexe firſte ſettinge forthe; and was (in the preſence of the Delantado) racked, to enforc him to confeſſe, what the purpoſe of the fleete was, whoe beinge able to Say nothinge of theyre in-tente, was examyned of the eſtate of this place, and what nomber of men heere weare leafte in guarde, what the p^rpoſe of this examynaſon was I leauē to yo^r Ho: wiſdomes to be conſidered of, Farther yt was given out, that they ſtayed to heere what was become of oure fleete, and as ſoone as they ſhoulde haue harde, that they weare landed in any place, that then they would put for Inglaude:

Att his beinge att Lyſhborne, there departed for to goe for faroule 3000: of Italiens, and yt was then expeſted that aboue this tyme the whoale fleete woulde be readye to put to ſea agayne:

There is geñially greate ſcarcetie and wante of Viſtualls, by reaſon that all that can be gotten is taken for the ſupplye of the Army. But they expeſte to be furnished wth all manner of neceſſaryes, by meaneſ of cteyne mchaunteſ of Milborouſh:

Moreover the ſpeech was there amone the comon people that the delantado was arived in this harbor, and had taken and killed all, and weare in peaceable poſſeſſion of all, and that the founde many freendes in theſe partes;

The

The wordes that the delantado ufed unto the reporter hereof, was, that the fier was but now kindled, and the warres but now begon betwene Englande and Spayne: In whose presence (att the same tyme) was Eleott a chefe councello: as yt seemeth, and the cause (as he fayeth) that these men weare racked.

I woulde gladly know theyre lo: pleasuers in aunswere of my lafte, as likewise for furnishinge of the place wth such proviçons as are necessary for the enemy can not haue a fitter opportunytie, nor a fayrer winde then they haue had of late, nether ys yt like all this will proue nothinge wherefore (under your Ho: coreçcon) in my pore opynion yt weare fitt somthinge weare don, that the people mighte be satisfied, these greate affayres are not neglected: they would thereby receaue the better contente and be the more forewarde in doinge theyre dutyes, and yt can not be unsafe that thinges be setled in an orderly course, and proviçon in a readynes to prevente the worste: Thus much I say in dischardge of my conscience and duty, because I know there is notice taken, of the backwardnes and slacknes of our naçon; Our enemyes thereby receavinge Comforde, for that they are perswaded, our naçon understandeth not what belongeth unto these affayres, nether judgmente to provide to prevente theyre purposes, the w^{ch} pswaçons are greate incoragemente unto them and the wante of necessary proviçons, will prove a greate discomforde unto us when tyme cometh:

I haue caused the spanyarde to be sente unto Tremton Castle in Cornewall⁵⁶⁰ and haue taken order accordinge unto

⁵⁶⁰ Trematon Castle is one of the still in an excellent state of preservation. most interesting ruins in Cornwall, being It was built before the Conquest and belonged

unto theyr ll: pleafuer in that behaulf, for theyre mayntennce, wth assuraunce that by theyre ll: nexte, there wilbe order for satisfac^{cō}on for what hath ben alreadye layde out, or otherwise yf paym^t, be not made, they wilbe returned from thence agayne, and yt weare better that they weare hanged, then that they should ronne upp and downe the Country as they haue don; Alsoe I desier to know theyre ll: pleafuer conñinge such Portingalls and spanishe pris-
oners as are belonginge unto pore men that haue brought them yn, by way of reprisall for that the chardge wilbe greate for to keepe them heere any longe tyme, nether will they doe yt, unlesse some order com from theyre Ll: to enforce them thereunto: And soe humbly cravinge pardon for my bouldnes, wth harty prayers for your Ho: I take my leaue

Your Ho: humbly to be comaunded:/

FARD: GORGES.

from the forte this 15th of December, 1597.

End: To the right ho: S^t Roberte Cecyll knighte principall secretary to her highnes/ 15. December 1597. S^t Fardinando Gorges to my M^t / Spanishe Aduifes./

(Cecil Papers 57/115.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YOUR HO: I haue fent herewth such letters as I understande to be of moste ymporte, that weare written by one of the spanishe prisoners to have byn prively conveyed

belonged to the ancient Dukes of Cornwall. It is about four miles from Ply-

mouth, in the little town of Saltash, and at the time when Sir Ferdinand wrote, of considerable importance as a place of defence.

conveyed into Spayne, him sealfē for the tyme I have severēd from the restē, and examyned him upon the particulērs of his letters, whose excuse is that he doth seeke his libertie :

there was twelve of them that upon thursday nighte laste brake prison out of Tremerton Castle (beinge thereunto advised by one Crosse one of the keepers men) and wente aborde a smale pinace that lay att Saltashe,⁵⁶¹ and readie victualed to sett sayle for the Coaste of Spayne, but they beinge repulſed by certeyne of the company that were aboarde, put themſeavles a ſhoare agayne and rann into the contrie, whoe are all recovered agayne, and the kepers man comitted to the gaolle:

heere is not yet any order harde of neyther of the pay nor apparell of the ſouldiers, the w^{ch} hath made them verie discontente, but by meanes of M^r Stallendge there hath byn ſhifte made for theyre weeklye lendinges unto this preſente exceptinge one weeke w^{ch} reſteth due unto them; Referringe the confideracon hereof to yo^r Ho: wiſdom; I humbly take my leave: From the Forte by Plymoth this 26th of December 1597.

Your Ho: humbly att comaunde /

FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the right ho: S^r Roberte Cicill knighte principall ſecretary to her highnes. End: 26 Dec 1597. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my M^r: 12 Spaniards brake prison out of Tremerton Castle, and apprehended againe. 1 p.

(Cecil

⁵⁶¹ Saltash is a ſmall town on the weſt bank of the river Tamar, about three miles northwest of Devonport.

(Cecil Papers 62/37.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT Ho^r: The nesefetey of this por mans Estate duth requier I shoulde recomend the confiderasifon of yt unto your ho^r, the rather for that yt was promised (upon the refelusion of his dismesment) he shoulde be other waife employde, and heringe of this expedision into Erland I am boulde to solisete your ho^r: in his behallfe for on of the Cumpanyes, the which if by your ho^s mens he may optayne he shall be bound, as allso my sellfe, to reste ever mor thankefull for so grete a benefete unto him: I shall desier be for my departur in to the contrey to haue some conferanse in discharge of my dupty wth your ho^r, at suche time as yte shall plese you to thinke your sellfe at beste Leyfouer, in the men time I humbly take my Leve resteinge humbly at

Your ho^{rs} cumand / FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add. To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cessell Kn: prinsepall Secretary unto hur Magest geve thes. End: 1598 9 July S^r Fer: Gorges to my M^r 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 177/80.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO: by your ho: lafte yt is your pleafuer I shoulde supplye the sixe companyes of Cornewall wth armes, the w^{ch} I am moste willinge and readie to accomplish, yf they shall stande in wante of any, But I perceave by the Cap^{ns}: themselfes, that they have compounded wth the Countrie for twentie poundes a peece to supplye theire owne defec^tes;

But

But for the twoe companyes I lafte wrote of, you shall finde them verie defective, both of men and armes; for the supply whereof there shall not neede to be more unto me then a word from yo^r ho: But yf there be any thinge to be taken from the Countrie I besech you that there may be good warrant, given for my discharge, for by this enclosed you shall perceave whether there be cause yee or noe, that I should desier yt: Before my willinge indevors weare dis- countennced I could wth saftie have don what had byn fitt, both unto the ease of yo^r ho^{rs}: and profit of her Ma^{tie}: Yet in discharge of my love and dutie unto yo^r sealf, I thinke yt not amyssy by this to advertize you, that yt weare good there weare some other course taken, then I see any yt, for the accomplishinge of yo^r expecta^cons, or yo^u shall heere there wilbe both confewSION and greate defectes; Of this I shall neede write noe more, but leave the consideration thereof to yo^r wisdom, and comende my sealf to be disposed of att:

Yo^r ho: comaunde / FARD: GORGES.

From the Forte by PLYMOTH this 14th of Auguste 1598.

Add: To the right ho: S^r Roberte Cycill knight principall secretarie to her highnes. End: 14 August 1598. S^r Fardinando Gorges to my M^r. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 64/3.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YOUR HO: now that your dire^ccons are accomlyshed, as far forth I proteste (whatfomever you myght have reported unto you) as hath lyen in my power, and for the furtheraunce thereof I have don many thinges wthout

wthout warrante, the w^{ch} yf I be called in question for, I hope I shall receave your ho: favor: But I most humbly pray that hereafter I be not coupled wth twoe such other Comyssioners as was our Mayo^r and Collonell: For, for the Collonell I never saw soe poore a gent, I was forced before they wente aborde to be both Collonell, Lyvetennte Collonell, Sarjaunt Major and Comysfarye and all; But notwth-standinge (this yll helpe) they weare all ymbarqued in fower howers after we began, and the shipes out into the sounde, soe as this nyght they sett sayle aboute 12: of the Clocke, by the next yo^r ho: shall receave a particuler of theire certeyne nomber att theire ymbarquinge, and what they have byn furnyshed wth all by me: untill when I humbly take my leave: From the Forte by Plymoth this 9th of September 1598:

Yo^r ho: humbly att Comaunde / FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the right ho: S^r Roberte Cycyll Knight principall secretary to her highnes: End: 1598. 9 Sept. S^r Far: Gorges to my Mr. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 64/23.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

S^r yt appereth by yo^r ho^{rs}: l^ere dated the 13th of September directed to the Mayo^r my sealf and others, that you expec^te there should be an accoumpte given, of a l^ere written from theire Ll: of the 22th: of Auguste conteyninge directions whether the men weare to goe: the w^{ch} l^ere as yt seemeth yo^u haue byn informed should be reaceved by me, and by me concealed from the knowledge of the rest. In our geñall

geñall Lere wee did all deny the receipte of any such, and for my owne parte (god is my rightfull judge) neyther I nor any to my knowledge receaved that lere whereof there came a copie signed under yo^r ho^{rs} hande: But one of the 23th I acknowledge to haue receaved directed only unto my sealf, in w^{ch} weare inclosed her Ma^{ties}: leres and your Lls: to my Lo: of bathe ⁵⁶² for the levyeinge of men and armes for the supplye of the Companyes, and in them noe mention of any former lers to any such efecte: This lere of the 23th directed as I faide was delyvered att the Forte eyther the 25th: or 26th: att 12: of the Clocke at nyghte, and my sealf not then retorneed from my Lo: of Bathes, whoe had sente for me to be wth him the 22th: But I harde by Capⁿ: Blany that there should have byn lers sente by him, and that he came away before he receaved them, soe as I conjectuer they weare Carried to his lodginge and yt may be remayne there still: For my owne parte I have inquired of the Postm^r, whoe can acknowledge the receipte of that one Packett aboute that tyme, w^{ch} I confesse to have come unto my handes beringe date the 23th: Neyther doe I know whie yt should be ymagineed whie I should have Receaved thother or upon what reason yt should be conjectured I should conceale him: The Mayo^r beinge firste in the direc^{con} unto whome they alwayes firste come in the like case: Nexte my sealf was att that instante out of the Towne. Agayne I hope I never shewed my sealf to have soe little witt as to conceale a matter of that ymporte, espetially knowinge the danger of yt: Farther

I

⁵⁶² William Bourchier, fifth Baron whose friend he was. He died July and third Earl of Bath. He served in 12th, 1623. the Netherlands with Sir Ferdinando,

I trust I have not byn noted to have byn soe negligente in any thinge that concerneth her Ma^{ts} service: Lastly can yt be ymagined that for noe comoditie to my sealf, or pleafuer to my freendes I should willingly give such an advantage agaynst me: But my hope is that at what tyme yo^r ho^r: shall have founde out the truth you wilbe pleased to hould a better opynion of me. In the meane tyme I humbly besech yo^r ho^r: to accepte this for my Resolute aunswere yt I never harde of any such l^{ere} untill I receaved the Copie signed under yo^r ho^{rs}: handes: Yf this be not true I renounce my salvation: And soe my bounden dutie remembred I humbly take my leave: Written from the Forte by Plymoth this 16th of September 1598.

Yo^r ho^{rs}: att Comaunde / FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the right ho: S^r Roberte Cecyll knight principall secretary to her highnes: End: 1598. 16 Sept. S^r Far: Gorges to my Mr. Aunswere to yo^r Ho^{rs} l^{re} of the 13th concerning the Packett messing. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 177/122.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.

MAY YT PLLESSE YOUR LO. heyer is this day arived on John Parkinges of Stonhous, that was on of thos latly taken by the Spanerd wherin Fasey was pylate. he delifered me this inclosed to be sente to your lo. he reporth that at the Groyn theyr ar 14 of the Kinges shipes and in the Toun and Contrey theyer aboutes 4000 soulderers. theyer ar newe byllt 30 fayll of shipes the which ar all redey, and ten of them apoynted to go in this flete which they say is to go into Erland wth 13000 soulderers that at Bayoun and at

Veyuna

Veyuna duth lay the gretes nomber of shipes that er apoynted for this serfes, at S^t Anderes theyr leyeth.6. galles redy all ways but they ar for the gard of the cost as yt is sayd.

The young Kinge⁵⁶³ hath apoynted to be crowned in Liffborn. other then this he can not reporte safe when he was ferste taken he was Examined by dun dego⁵⁶⁴ what flete theyer was makinge redey in Ingland what shipes the Quene hade at Plimouth what soulderers theyer war what strenketh the plase was of and many otheyr questiones unto the lyke effecte the intent wherof I refer unto your Lo. considerasian.

Heyer is a penes⁵⁶⁵ of myn that hellpet to cary the souldiers in to Erland retorneed by the which I reseved this lettore heyerin closed all so: but to heyer hou myfarably all thinges duth stand theyer ould greve the hart of any honeste man amounste otheyrs theys inconvenensys ar particolorly noted: ferst the Counsell amonste them sellfes devided and distratted the soulderers and cap: myfarably pore and Extremly discoraged, the Lls. and comality⁵⁶⁶ of the contrey all ether gon unto the enemy or upon termes of goyinge. What god will have shall be, and so my bounden deuty unto your L. remembred I humbly take my leve beinge for ever

Your L. at comand / FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r and my moste aproved good L. the Erell of Essex Erell marshall⁵⁶⁷ of Ingland geve theys. dated at Plimouth the 21 of October. End: S^r Ferd Gorge. 1 p.

(Cecil

⁵⁶³ Philip III.

⁵⁶⁴ Don Diego de Sotamayor, admiral of the Spanish fleet.

⁵⁶⁵ Pinnace.

⁵⁶⁶ Commonalty.

⁵⁶⁷ The Earl Marshal was the eighth

VOL. III. — 8

great State officer. His duty was to marshal and order great ceremonials, to direct proclamations, and to take cognizance of matters relating to honors, arms, and pedigrees. He was the head officer in the Court upon chivalry, and hence

(Cecil Papers 199/57-8.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF ESSEX.

MAY YT PLEASE YO^R Lo: I ame sorie to see that for want of good councell and providente care in convenyente tyme the cheefe piller of our state is brought unto that exegencie that there is a necessitie to ingage the whole for the preservaⁿon thereof: And although I know right well your Lo: doth understande of what cōsequence yt is that yo^u are to undertake: yet I can not (havinge had experience of your Lo: favorable acceptance) but put you in remembrance of some thinges that will not be amysse for your Lo: to thinke upon. For you are now to have in your power the disposinge of the hope and expectaⁿon of your nation, the lyfe and welfare of your dreade soveraigne and to ingage the fortune of your sealf and your freendes and all in a moste dangerous tyme in a rewened state and myserable country upon a stronge enemy (thinges standinge as att this tyme yt doth wth us) by natuer and longe practize valyent and experte noe stranger unto us nor unacquaynted wth the manner of our proceedinges, nor destitute of daylye intellygence of our purposes, himsealf of a ripe knowledg and judgm^t of what he hath undertaken and of a proude spirite his peoples hartes in generall full of contempte and malyce unto our nation of late incoraged and made insolente by many victories and overthrowes

hence was one of the most conspicuous officers in the realm. Essex was created by Elizabeth Earl Marshal in 1597, the office having become vacant by the death of the Earl of Shrewsbury. His appointment, which gave him precedence over older and abler men, caused many heart-burnings.

throwes given: And thereby they have gotten experiens and the use of theire armes as I have saide, they have furnished themseavles wth all thinges necessary for the prosecutinge of such a warr, the hopes alsoe and assurance he hath of supplyes and releife from foreine partes yf he shall nede them: Theyre bodies are alsoe enured unto all hardnes, theire nomber farr exceedinge what I have hetherunto harde spoken of to be opposed agaynst him; And generally (howsomer some may seeme to carrie themseavles) they joyne in one to disburden them seavles of a forreyne govern^t, as they hould yt, All this your Lo: ys to oppose in some forte by the contrarye: For your ould souldiers that you shall find there are discoraged and made Cowardes by divs overthrowes receaved, and generally all for the moste parte discomforted for wante of necessary meanes and dew respecte in case of theire extremytie, the stores are disfurnished the Country holye possessed by thenemye, the state devided, and one opposed agaynst thother, your new levies unpractized in the use of theire armes, unacquaynted wth the warres and unable longe to continew theire health in respecte of the change of the countrie and theire dyet: your Capteynes not experienfed in the Natuer of those services. Farther your enemyes heere opposinge themseavles to detracte both meanes and reputacon from you all that they are able, Soe as yf you provide not to prevente all that may ensewe of the inconvenyences you shall but lose your sealf your freendes and your country These I have not spoken as diswadinge or dislikinge that yo^r Lo: should undertake the recoveringe agayne by yo^r vertue what others hath loste thorow theire folies: But only in dischardge of my love and dutie, to
thende

thende that yo^r Lo: may providently foresee and prevente the inconvenyences that are apparante unto the world both for the good of yo^r Country and preservacon of your owne honor: And for my owne parte how I am affected to make one of this enterprize may easilie be ymagined, Consideringe first yt is my profession by the w^{ch} meanes I lyve, nexte the reason considered I have to loath the manner of my lyvinge heere, where thorow cause of discontente and opynion of wronges receaved I hould my sealf unsatisfied, agayne those whome I esteeme to be my most dereste and hono^{rable}: freendes are cheefly interested in yt, Lastly my loue unto my Countrye and dutifull service unto her sacred Ma^{tie}: doth comaunde me thereunto, And therefore wthout yfes or andes I am resolued to be one, and such a one as yo^r Lo: shall think me worthie unto, whome fence I have given power to dispose of my lyfe: I doe wholy referr the care of my reputation: Even soe wth humble respeac^te of my bounden dutie I take my leave cravinge pardon of your Lo: for my bouldnes and remayninge for ever

Your Lo: humbly to be comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

From the fort by PL: this 4th of December 1598.

I moust humbly in trete your lo: out of the deutey and offes of a frend, and my knoulege and understandinge of my respete unto your lo: to laye aparte all opinion of mysse consayte of my deyer frend S^r Coneres Cliford,⁵⁶⁸ for I do know

⁵⁶⁸ Sir Coniers Clifford was descended from one of the younger branches of the family known as the Dukes of Cumber- land. He was knighted by Essex for gallant services before Rouen in 1591, at the same time that Sir Ferdinando Gorges

know in my soule and confhense he cannot leve that you cane mor frely dispossesse of then you may do of him and theyer for that yt may apeyer I have discharged the parte of a honest man I bech⁵⁶⁹ you to exscept of me who will ingage my sellfe and repetasian unto your lo for the performanse by him of as moch as I now proteste for him and in his behalfe, and that yt will plesse your Lo to confyder by what menes you may beste manfeste unto the woredl your faforable exsceptans and alouanse of this my humble fute if not theyer canne fall nothinge I proteste mor greves nor beter⁵⁷⁰ unto me wherfor agayn I beche your Lo in his behalfe and so do leve yt unto yor nobell hart.

and that this may be to yor Lo Expetasian I subscrybe my nam to see acompleshed or not to be

FARD: GORGES.

Letter signed: the postscript holograph. Add: To the right ho: my singuler good Lo: the Earle of Essex Earle Marshall of Englande. End: S^r Ferd. Gorge 4 Dec. 98 at Plymouth. 3 pp.

(Cecil Papers 60/21.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YOUR HO^R: My shippes unexpected retorne from the South wardes soe foone, partly by reasoun of the evellnes of her beere, and some other her provitions, as alsoe an encounter she mett wthall of the Rocke,⁵⁷¹ in
the

Gorges received that honor. He commanded the *Dreadnaught* in the Cadiz Expedition, where he added to his reputation for skill and bravery by his achievements on that occasion. He was slain in Ireland in 1599.

⁵⁶⁹ Befeech.⁵⁷⁰ Grievous nor bitter.⁵⁷¹ The Rock of Lisbon, or *Cabo da Roca*, on the west coast of Portugal.

the w^{ch} she lost many of her men, is an occation that I am enforced att this presente humblye to crave yo^r ho^r favo^r to be a meanes that I may have leave to com up for some smale tyme for the dispach of some busines, that I have w^{ch} standeth me very much upon; It shall not be needful, to troble yo^r ho^r wth the knowledge how greate my hinderannce hath byn by this mysfortune, theire encounter was wth a shipp of 560: tonnes that had served the kinge these fower yeres and now was thereof discharged, whoe had lefte her Ordnance att the Groyne reservinge only some few Peeces for her defence to bringe her to S^t Lukes, where shee was to be made readie to goe (as themseavles doe reporte) wth Peter Sebeaes⁵⁷² and other for S^t John de Portereko,⁵⁷³ shee had in her some 60: smale shott, whoe by reason of the greatenes of her lyeinge soe much above myne, weare soe well assured of themseavles as they beate backe my men wth the losse of seven of them upon theyre firste entrie, and made them glad to take theyre shipp agayne, after w^{ch} the marriners not accustomed to such encownters could not by any meanes be drauen to enter her afresh, doubtinge that shee had byn better provided then in truth she was, the Capⁿ: seinge that was enforced to lay his sides unto hers and soe battered her, untill att the lafte she was readie to sinke the w^{ch} thenemye perceavinge, called for mercie, and soe after thexpence of 164 shott of the demye Culveringe and sacre they tooke her sett all the Spaniardes one

⁵⁷² Peter Sebures (spelled by Ralegh Cebures) was one of the admirals of Spain, and commanded one of the squadrons which opposed Ralegh in 1597.

⁵⁷³ San Juan de Porto Rico, a noted rendezvous for the Spanish ships in the West Indies.

one the shoare that weare leaft alive, and beinge not able to
bringe away the shipp, burnt her before theire faces: wth
what judgment and honestie the Capⁿ: behaued himsealf
in this encounter I desier others should rather reporte then
my sealf, because he is soe neere of kinne unto me, as yt may
be thought I speake partiallie in his commendacons but will
refer yt unto yo^r ho^r censuer, and in his behaulfe crave yo^r
ho^r favo^r unto him, and that yt will please you to take
notice of him soe farre forth, as to accepte of him unto yo^r
protection, And soe referringe the reste unto his owne
reporte: I humblye take my leave: From the Forte by
Plymoth this 5th: of March 1598.

Yo^r Ho^rs humblie att Comaunde /

FARD: GORGES.

Add. To the right ho^r: S^r Roberte Cecyll knight principall Secretarie to her
highnes: End: 5 March 98 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my M^r desires leave
to come up. 1 p.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXI. No. 133.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR WALTER RALEGH.

S^r Accordinge to my promisse; you muste understande
that heeare is Retorned Capten Vennarde frome Brest who
hath brought under the governers hande the particular of
the Spaniardes p^{re}operation: w^{ch} is that the are in a Redines
to set seayle as to deay beinge the Xth of August wth them
60 galles 60 gret shipes and wth 60 small shipes and in them
3000 soldiers exsidynge Royally furnyshed wth all maner of
necesaris; Hit is trew that they sent to Brest to Intreate if
happyly the weare distrest that the myght haue the fauor of
the

the harbor and such necesaris as the shoulde want for ther mony; But that was In some sorte Reafused them by Madam Surdiance in the absence of her husbande lettynge them to know that all though there wear a leage betwyxt them and speaye as ther was betwyxt Inglande and france yet that ther was more Reason why the shoulde gyue ayde to the Quene of Inglande and her armey if the shoulde sickle to force them in that harbor: for that the had Reayseaued meny benyfite frome her Magesty In ther Greatest extremyty: And as Capten Venarde Informes me the are spesially purposed to a tempt this place: And ho hit is furnyshed for defence you partly understande wth defects we must suply as well as we meay wth the olde seayinge of Inglande God and S^t George: let them come and they dare so wth my kyndest comēdatiō and my harty loue to yo^r selfe and my lady I comēd you to god. frome the forte the 30th of July:

Yo^r louinge cosin / FARD: GORGES.

End: 30 July 1599. S^r ferdinando Gorges to S^r Walter Raleigh./ To my honer-able and louinge frinde S^t Walter Raleigh knyght Lorde warden of the Staneress:⁵⁷⁴ At Sherbor geue these: to be lefte at the poste Masters to be sent to his house.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXI. No. 141.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

My humble and bounden dutey remembred:/ this present day I refueed a Letter or a Comysfion from your lls: dely-ferede

⁵⁷⁴ Sir Walter Ralegh had been made, an office of profit and importance. in 1585, Lord Warden of the Stannaries, The word "stannary" is from *stannum*, tin;

fereyde me by the May^r, and diretted unto me, himselfe, and M^r harres: for to mouster and pay my men by the poulle⁵⁷⁵ lyke wayes M^r bage the marchante — aquainted me wth a notheyer unto him sellfe for the payment of them accordingly . the reson of the takeinge of this Course wth me, and no notheyer Cap^r. of my plase (all though non mor honest) was the knorlege your lle: haue of my formor mysdemennor in that behallfe wherof yt semeth her Maj^{ty} is mad aquainted:/ it is trewe I dyd Confesse (wher my harte ould not sufer me to deny a truth) my faulte and dyd ashour myself that your lle: had bin as well satisfyed wth my promyse of reformatiōn upon confiderasōn as you effely beleued my ofense: but now I finde the Contrary and theyer wth my hart and senses stroken in to a fefor for the psent. so imposible and unable I am (I mouste Confesse) to leue disgrased or suspected wher I haue in devered by all manner of daingores and travell and Expensese to deserve well. and that yt should be now at on instant dashed by the myse reportes of sum ignorant or malisus parson, how hevey and infoportable theyes greafes are unto my natuer your lle: shall heyer farder heyer after. but the emenent dayngor of my countrey shall imforse me to for gete as mouch as is posible this pasion of grefe, the which is not for that I sorow that theyer is such a course taken nor is yt greve unto me

tin; and the courts in Devonshire and Cornwall for the administration of justice among those connected with the great industry of tin-mining, an industry considered of national importance, were called stannary courts. Sir Walter, when this letter was written him,

was at Sherborne Castle enjoying one of those few brief intervals of rest that were vouchsafed to him in his busy life, and which he so much delighted to pass in his favorite Dorsetshire home.

⁵⁷⁵ By the poll or head.

me but that my dishonesty is publeshid to be the cause theyerof: for I my sellfe had taken order befor the arifall of your lls leteres that they should haue bin mustred and boked by fertayn of the goufeses of the Countrey who they have a proued unto your lls: that I had doun my sellfe ronge in my confeson. but now fethence your lls hath othayer wayes ordered yt I humbly submyte my sellfe unto yt, all though I wish the cause theyer of hade bin for bor[ne] I be[se]che your lls. to consider howe the men I haue hade, hath bin armed and mayntayned armes to this present then, howe theyes That be armed mainteyned wth fyer wth bedes, wth candelles wth botes and diferes otheyer nefesaryes wher of I never yt passed any account or soute any satysfaxsion for all the which I doute not but your lls will thinke of, and geue order for, and if this newes of Cap fenors be trewe your lls shall trewely knowe the[reof] theyer shall not be found a nonestor man of my nafion then my sellfe thus not presuminge to say any mor I humbly Comyt your lls to the ptxfion of the allmyghty. wrten in hast and mouch Payne the last of July by him that is

Your lls most hu[mble] at Comaundt/

FARD: GORGES.

Erd: for hur Mag^{ste} afares. To the Right h^o the lls: of hur mag^{te} privey Counfall geve theyes./ 1599. vi^{mo} Jul^o/ S^t Far: Gorges to y^e lls :/

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXII. No. 6.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humble dutie remembred It may appeere unto yo^r Ho^r what I haue receaved W^{ch} in a forte dothe confirme such

such intelligens as hath byn brought by foe many wayes, and for my parte to giue unto yo^r hono^r my private opynion I doe verelie thinke that the Galleyes will prefentlie goe for y^e Low Countries and wth them a proportion of his best shippes wth y^e rest of the fleete and lande forces he will seeke to put a shoare heere, there is reason to beleue that his greatest attempte wilbe upon the Thames, for that is both a shorte Worke for him and wthout any greate difficultie, Yf yt be not hastelie prevented and other prevenſion there can not be made but by her Ma^{ties} fleete or an Army to be lodged upon the Ryvo^r, and that to be well ordered and furnished of all necessaries, and this in my conceipte ys more and tyme weare alreadie put forwarde and a bridge made to passe to each fide upon all ōcons As alsoe to stopp theire paſſage, for when thinges shall be don upon a foodeyne espetially amongst people vniuired to these busines yo^u will finde theire mynde much amazed and them ſeauies much diſcoraged, beſides there muſt be a tyme to ſettle thinges in order espetially for ſoe greate a buſines as this is: Of much hereoſ I haue had experiens att this tyme in ſuch thinges as I haue to doinge heere, whereoſ I thought yt my dutie under corection both to adverteſe and to giue my pore oppinyon unto yo^r hono^r/

Farther I doe humblie beſeſch your hono^r to be a meanes that ſom Course may be taken to giue contente unto theſe honeſt men that are alreadie come for the deſence of this place, and dothe ſeme ſoe willinglie to adventuer both bodie and goodes that they may not be eyther diſinable agaynſt an other tyme, or diſcouraged att this preſent, Alſoe of the willingnes of the gent' that are heere about, and the zealous
desier

desier they haue to pforme theire duties, and to shew theyre afections att this tyme, Ys not in my opynion amyssē to be remembred; and theire names to be noted as first S: W^m Strode, M^r Coplestone⁵⁷⁶ my Cosen Gorges, and M^r Crymes,⁵⁷⁷ for these hath ingaged themseualues to giue satisfacon unto theire Companyes, Yf otherwyse yt be not to be had whearof I besech yo^r Ho^r: to take notice, And soe to conceaue of yt as they will undoubtedlie deserue. Thus cravinge pardon. I humlie take my leauē written in hast from the forte by plimoth this 3. of August / 99 /

Yo^r hono^{rs} most humblie att Comaunde:/

FARD: GORGES.

End: To the right ho : S^r Robert Cecyll knight principall secretarie to her highnes / 1599 / 3 Aug: S^r Far : Gorges to my M^r:/,

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXII. No. 67.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

My bounden dutie unto yo^r Ll remembred: by these intellygence yt may appeere in my poore opynion, eyther that by reason of the ficknes, the w^{ch} is generall allongest the whole coast, they are not able to put to the feas soe hastelie as they expected, or els that they purpose to follow wth all expedition, eyther of the w^{ch} will easelie be deserued in

⁵⁷⁶ The Copplestones were an influential family in Devonshire, and allied to the family of Gorges by marriage.

⁵⁷⁷ Crymes was an enterprising man who erected labor-saving mills on Rotherham Down in order to work the tin-

mines there. The result was a violent opposition of the miners, who thought they saw in the machinery an attack on labor, and they cited Crymes before the Star-chamber; but he found an able defender in Sir Walter Ralegh.

in a shorte tyme. for yf yt be soe that they defer theire enterprize then they will presentlie sever theire army that they haue assembled in flaunders, and in like manner dischardge their marriners for the present that they haue att the Groine, or otherwise yf theire Jorneye be but deferred for a short tyme they will continew theire Army there, and goe forwarde wth their preparations elfsweare. Notwth-standinge seeth yt is possible yf by vj and vij galleyes att a tyme they may convey theire whole army and fleete of galleyes into the low countries that they will attempte to sett over their fleete of shippes att any tyme although yt be in winter. Thus much I presume (under yo^r Lls: favo^{rs}) to write att this present, onlie to put yo^r Lls in remembraunce of the 300: men heere continewed for the better defence of this place, And wthall to know yo^r Lls: pleasuer, whether they shalbe continewed or dismissed accordinge to the tyme that my lo: of Bath hath appoynted, as alsoe to understand of yo^r Lls: whether I shall proceede in those purposes wth I haue acquaynted yo^r Lls, I hould for the passinge of bridges or strenghtninge of these places, wth of necessitie are to be provided for, yf the purpose of th'enemye goe forwarde, inasmuch as yt doth stande the assured safetie of the whole estate of these partes upon; I haue forboren hetherunto the doinge of many necessarie worke in respecte of the chardge for that I could not understand from yo^r Lls; how acceptable yt myght be eyther unto her Ma^{tie} or yo^r Lls: Nether did I finde yt possible to drawe the Countrie unto any farther chardge. But of all this and yo^r Lls: farther pleasuers I humblie desier to understande, wth what convenyencie your Lls: shall thinke fitt; Wthall I besech yo^r

yo^r Lls to remember the reporte that ys giuen out of fountenandes: levyeinge of 6000: french men for the king of Spaine to be ymployed in this action, and how possible yt is these monyes should be for him, and these galleyes to convey him and his men to the army, but of this yo^r Lls are better able to conceaue the probabilitie or truth then my sealf, unto whose graue Wisdomes, I humblie refer the consideration of the whole: Comittinge yo^r Lls: to the proteccⁿon of the Almyghtie I humblie take my leaue: written from S^t Nicholas Island this 23th of Augusste 1599:

Yo^r Lls: most humblie to be comaunded:/

FARD: GORGES.

End: To the right ho: my verie good Lls: the Lls: of her Mat^s most honorable privie Councell. 1599/ — 23 Aug: S^t Far: Gorgees to y^e lls — whether the 300 men shalbe there contynued./

(Cecil Papers 73/20.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE. My Lo: of Bath sent out att his beinge here a smale Pinace of this toune whereof M^r Bagge and some others weare owners, whoe hath retorne^d this intelligence hereincloused, whereby yt may appeere that yt is likelie theire purpose for England is broken of for this yere, but the next they will goe forwards, wherefore seinge by ex-perience the many defectes and wantes of this place, I thought yt fitt in tyme to sollicite a supplie of as many of them as ys possible to be provided, the w^{ch} I have herewth sent unto theire Lls: humblie desiringe that such consideration may be had of them, as the necessitie of this place and tyme doth requier.

And

And in few wordes to speake unto you of the estate of these partes in generall, to th'ende you may not be deceaved by what you may heere by the reportes of ignorant people. First for the gentrie they are in faction and devided amongst themseavles, soe as whatsoever the one would make the other will endevor to marr, and in truth ignorante what they ought to doe; the moste of them of a dispocition to please the people about them, wthout a found confideration of the publique good, the people themseavles (I meane the men appoynted to armes) a raw multitude, wthout eyther use of theire armes or knowledge of any order. Soe as howsomer we made shew of our seavles, yf wee had byn sodenlie attempted, you would have hard of much confewcion and myghtie disorders. For heere was not one Capⁿ nor officer more then I had of my owne that understoode any thinge. These 300: that are heere, yf yt might stand wth her Ma^{ts} pleasuer to keepe them heere untill the next yeere, would be better then any 1500: in the Countrie to be brought in hether upon a sodeyne besids yt would be a meanes to continew some officers together, to her Ma^{tie} a greate certeyntie, and the undoubted saftie of this place. farther. yf the enemy offer to land in any other parte of this Countrie I can my sealfe wth better assurnnce promyse to ympeach his landinge, and warrant to keepe him from fortifieinge upon all this Coaste, yf soe I may be authorised from her Ma^{tie}, for by this alreadie paste bothe the state of this people and countrie is sufficientlie knownen unto me, and what course is to be taken wth them, the w^{ch} maketh me the boulder to presume to speake thus much. The comoditie of kepinge them heere, can be nothinge unto me in my particuler, for I have appoynted

appoynted them to severall Capteyns, as 100: to my Cousen Gorges to whome I have appoynted a sufficient liuetennt, an other 100: to Capⁿ Dodington, and the third to Capⁿ Catchmay, this I have don att this present the better to defende the place, as alsoe to kepe some officers together, my owne estate indeede beinge soe weake as I am not able to doe any more of my sealf, havinge spente all upon them I have byn able to make. This I humbly referr unto your hono^{rs} consideration, wthall desiringe that yt may please your hono^r to be a meanes to helpe my present wante w^{ch} I doe protest is not smale: for w^{ch} I shall be bounde to pray for yo^r hono^r, and rest for ever att

Your hono^{rs} comaundem^t / FARD : GORGES.

Add. To the right ho : S^r Roberte Cecyll knight principall Secretarie to her Ma^t End. 1599 25 Aug. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ pp.

(Cecil Papers 73/23.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

My bounden duty remembred May yt plesse your lls I have sent this berer Capⁿ Leget as well to pout your lls in mynd of the grete want bothe of ordenanse and shote for the defense of this plasse as to bringe theys Letteres wherby yt may apere that the define of the Enemy for Ingland is for this yer alltreyd, and I do humbly beche your lls, sum Course may be taken for the suply theyer of in tym in as mouch as the want is so evedente to all men of any gougment I will for ber to speke what shifte I haue bin forsed unto for want theyer of, yt a cordinge unto the ould sayinge better a bad shifte than non at all: Such ordenanse as by your lls, I was

a poyntd to reseve out of Corfe,⁵⁷⁸ this berer cann beste de-
lyfor what anfor he had and what they wer that ar theyer,
for I intreted him to take the paynes in as mouch as I my
sellfe could not have Leyfor to have fene them shippid and
fente to this plase. so humbly atendinge your lls the farder
plesur I take my leve writen in hast this 25 of Augoust

Yo^r lls humbly at Comand / FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add. To the Right hor the lls: of hur Mag^t most ho^r prevy Counsell
theys. End. 1599 25 Aug. S^r Far: Gorges to y^e lls. 1 p.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXII. No. 84.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

My humble dutie remembred. I receaved your Lls: lere
dated the 25th of this instante the 27th of the same att one
of the Clocke att night directed to my Lo: of Bath. By
the w^{ch} yt seemeth to be yo^r Lls pleasuer (upon intelly-
gence of the arrivall of the Spannysh fleete upon the
Coast of Brittany), that the forces of this Countie should
be assembled, to wthstand any attempte they should make
upon any of these Coastes. The same intelligence was
brought unto y^r lo: on Thursday laste Whereupon his Lls:
had giuen directions that the forces should march to the
places appoynted for the rendezvouze agreed one by his
L^p and his deputies, upon the desolvinge of the Troopes
when theie weare laste assembled, But one Thursday att
night I understoode yt was but Sixe gallyes that was seene
upon

⁵⁷⁸ Corfe Castle, in the isle of Purbeck. was dismantled by the troops of Crom-
The castle is still a well-preserved ruin, well.
though founded in the Saxon era. It

upon the Coaste, and those weare to goe wth certeyne Treafuer, into the low Countries, and that for certeyne there weare noe Shippes in theire Company, the w^{ch} was advertized unto yo^r Lls by the Maio^r and my sealf^e that present night; as alsoe I signified as much unto my lo^r: liueten^{nt}e that presente whereupon the Troopes weare agayne dismiste. And for the farther confirmation of the truth of what had byn formerlie reported, heere arrived a Carvell on Satterday wth certeyne spannish l^{eres} signifieinge att lardge the departuer of the Adelantado for the Islande, all the w^{ch} weare sent unto theire Lls: by Capⁿ leggatt, Whoe I presume is longe fense arrived. After whose departuer unto this present there hath not any thinge com unto my handes worthie the writinge, but as foone as ought doth come unto my knowledge, I will wthout delay make present advertizem^t unto yo^r Lls: thereof as yt is my dutie: Thus comittinge yo^r Lls: unto the protection of the Almighty: I humblie take my leau^e:—

Yo^r Lls: most humblie to be Commaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

From the forte by PLIMOTH this 28th of Auguſte/ 99:/

End: To the right honorable my verie good Lls: the Lls: of her Mat^s: most honorable privie Councelle. 1599. 28. Aug: S^r Far: Gorges to y^e Lls: /

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXII. No. 93.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

My bounden dutie unto your good Lls: remembred: This instante day (by vertue of warrante from the lo^r: liuetenn^t) I haue dismissed the 300: men appoynted by your Lls:

Lls: for the better defence of this place whereof I thought yt my dutie to giue your Lo^{ps} to understande to thende yt yf your Lls shall find yt fitt in yo^r graue Wisdomes and better knowledge of th'enemyes purpose or proceedinges, such order may be taken for theire retorne hether agayne as to your lls: shalbe thought most meete: for my owne parte I must confess yt, to be both against my advise, and will. Inasmuch as although I haue understande of the departuer of the Delantado from the Groine, and therewth haue seene some of theire opinions that they weare gon for the Treasuer, Yet I doe farther understande, that all that may be, but a devise whereby he myght assuer himsealf (upon Notize giuen unto yo^r lls of his departuer) all the forces appoynted for defence should be dismissed, to the w^{ch} assurance he myght be perswaded by many reasons. First the unseasoneablenes of the yere therebie comonlie beleved, not fitt for him to make Warres upon our Coaste (although he came y^e laste tyme in October). Nexte the Chardge that yt would be unto us, noe wayes to be borene by our estate att this instante, and therefore would accepte of any reasonable excuse to disburden our fealues thereof: And the cause that perswadeth me to this my suspition, ys, that he hath taken wth him soe many of his land forces wth soe extraordinarie a proportion of all thinges, beinge in efecte all that he had provided for his attempte against Ingland, and in all reason a proportion farr exceedinge what myght be necessarie for any thinge he could stand doubtfull of to be accompted in these partes, as alsoe that the gallies are stll att the Groine, wthout any order but to remayne there untill they should heere farther from the Delantado: and what provision that
can

can possiblie be made is still transported thether, the w^{ch} doth argue in my pore opynion noe p^rpose in him to defer any tyme but onlie a devise to worke his owne advantage, therebie thinkinge to take her Ma^{tie} att unawares and unprovided for defence. This confidered yt semeth unto me (under yo^r lls: corections) that yt can not be amyss^e to doubte as much, and to provide to secuer a place so dangerous, seinge wth soe easie and soe reasonable a proportion of meanes yt may be obteyned. Perhappes I may shew my fealfe more bould then doth becom me, to feme doubtfull of that the w^{ch} yo^r lls in yo^r better knowledg haue noe reason to doubt of: for my said defaulte I humblie craue to be pardoned and that yt may please yo^r Lls: to reput yt unto my care, as desirous by foresight to avoide an emynent and dangerous myscheefe: The confideration hereof I comend to yo^r Lls: graue and better knowledg: And soe wth remembraunce of my humble dutie unto your good Lls: I humblie take my leau^e: Written from her Ma^{ties} forte by Plimoth this 30th of Auguste 1599:/

Yo^r lls: most humblie to be Comaunded:/

FARD: GORGES.

End: To the right honorable my verie good Lls: the Lordes of her Ma^{ts}: most ho: Privie Councell./ The 300 men appointed for the defence of this place discharged./

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXIV. No. 101.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YO^R HO^R: Here is com unto me this present day one William Nuten an ould man, And as he saith belonging to my Lo: Admirall, whoe was taken coming

coming out of the streites in a shipp of London (called the Chaunce) by the Indian fleete that brought home the Kinges Treasuer, who reporteth that they arived in S^t Lucas the 14: of februarie, and brought wth them 13: myllyons of Siluer and 5: of Gould: Alsoe the said examynnt doth say that in the tyme of his aboade there he had conference wth a frier one S^r George, Parson of S^t George in S^t Lucas, and Chapleyne to the Duke De Medina,⁵⁷⁹ whoe seemed to bewayle unto him the danger that was pretended unto his Countrie, layeing open the preparation that was in hand, and theire purpose eyther to goe for the west parte of England or for Ireland. Assuringe that to his knowledg there weare in that Riuer 24: saile of Gallyounes the most of them Rigged, and that there weare att farold 24: saile of smale shippes more appoynted for the same seruis. In like manner that there was in the Riuer of Ciuill diuers of those that weare distressed the last yere, also that diuer's Galleyes weare appoynted to be readie, and that they did expect theyre fleete would consist of 30: thousand souldiers and 80: sayle of Shippes of warr besides Galleyes victualers & Shipps for transperta^con and they all appoynted to make theire Rendeuz att the Groyne wth what Speed they can possibly be readie. Farther he doth say

⁵⁷⁹ Gaspar Alonzo Perez de Guzman, Duke of Medina Sidonia, was a Spanish statesman, brother-in-law of Duke John of Braganza, whom the Revolution of 1640 placed on the throne of Portugal. The Duke of Medina having failed in an attempt to make himself sovereign of Andalusia, was condemned to challenge the King of Portugal as a knight-errant,

and to await his coming on the frontier of the kingdom. Here he was obliged to remain for a considerable period armed cap-a-pie, awaiting a foe who was not to appear, and stung to madness by the ridicule of his enemies. After the completion of his sentence he kept from the public view, his proud spirit having been completely broken.

say that the same newes was confirmed unto him by diuers both freench m̄chaunts and Inglysh men, and wthall that it is questionable whether pedow de Valdefon⁵⁸⁰ or the Delantado doth Comaund, but yf that the one doth Com then tho'ther of them is appoynted to take Chardg of the Gallies in the streightes: Likewise that before the arriuall of the Treasuer there was no such expectaçon of any preparation to be made this yere; But now yt is freshe in everie mans mouth. Thus much I thought yt my dutie to giue notice of unto your Hono^r, how trew or untrew soeuer yt may seeme to be. Humblie prayeing that consideration may be had of the wantes, (in a manner) of all necessaries for the defence of this place, and ympeachm^t of his descent to any greate purpose, our Countrie hauing in a manno^r laid aside all conceipte or opinion of the use of theire Armes by reason of the Comon Rumo^r and expectaçon of peace as more playnely yt will hereafter appeere when men of understandinge shalbe required by her Ma^{te} or theire lls: to loke into those afaires. All the w^{ch} I humblie recomend unto yo^r graue wisdom to be considered And for my owne parte I will continew as yt is my dutie.

Your ho: humblie to be comaunded: /

FARD: GORGES.

Written from the forte of PLIMOTH this xjth of April 1600.

End: To the right ho: S^r Roberte Cecyll knight principall Secretary to her highnes. Spanyfhe Aduysees delyuered by one Willyam Newton.

(Cecil

⁵⁸⁰ Pedro de Valdes, or Valdefon, was a Captain and Lieutenant-General of some renown in the reign of Philip III. He commanded one of the ill-fated ships belonging to the Spanish Armada, which was captured and taken into Dartmouth.

(Cecil Papers 78/58.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO: I have byn entreated by S^r Thomas Sherley,⁵⁸¹ to take into my custodie som things of his because as yt semeth by him he is in doubt yt may be lyable unto his debtis, and so he shalbe forced, (yf they have libertie to entermedle there wth all and to Ceaze thereupon) to sell yt for theire satisfaccons to his greate hinderañce & losse. I have byn willing to do him all kindnes to the uttermost of my power, and will do so still, but because I do not know how yt may be taken, yf complaynt should be thereof made unto yo^r lls: I have forboren to yeld unto yt, untill I may heere from yo^r ho: in that behalfe, unto whome I perceave he hath written himsealfe as unto his onlie hope and from whome he doth expecte all his good to proceed. For my owne parte I never saw pore gent[~] in a more myserable estate, being afflicted wth extremytie of sicknes, neerelie destitute of honest and trustie servants and matched wth an unrulie rout of marrino^{rs}, infomuch as I dare to say yf yt had not byn his fortune to have com into this place he had not byn 1000[£]: the better for all that he hath brought wth him, what yo^r ho: shall eyther comaund or advize me unto upon your l^{ere} (wherein I may shew my Love unto you or any freend of yours) I protest I will do what is possible for me.

Your ho: unfeynedlie to be comaunded /

From the Forte this 13th of April 1600 :

FARD: GORGES.

This

⁵⁸¹ Sir Thomas Shirley was one of three brothers, all extensive travellers in the Orient. So renowned did they become as travellers in strange lands, that their adventures were made the subject of a popular drama, under the title of *The Travels of the Three English Brothers*.

This inclosed came unto me as I was redey to send this to your hono^r, but if hur mag^t shipes had bin heyer I durst not have geven them notes theyerof be cause I perseve they have taken the lyke unkindly and have mad my Lo: Admarall to think evell of me be sydes for my good will to hur Mag^t serfes and his Ls:

The postscript in Gorges' hand.

Add: To the right ho : S^r Robert Cecyll knight principall Secretarie to her highnes. End: 1600 13 Apr: S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r a L^re from M^r Willyam Treffrye. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 79/46.)

THE MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH, SIR F. GORGES, AND MR. HARRIS
TO THE COUNCIL.

OURE humble and bounden duties remembred: May yt please your good Lls: to be advertized, heere is brought in by Capteyne Carpenter three young gentlemen taken by him passing out of Fraunce into Spaine in a freench barque; whose examynations (according to yor Lls: directions unto us given in that behalfe) we doe herewth humblie recomend to your Lls. graue wisdoms to be considered. In the meane tyme we have taken order for theire safe keping, untill yt please your Lls. to give farther directions what shalbe don wth them. Soe wth our dutifull and daylie prayers to the Almyghtie for the continuïce of your Lls. in health and long prosperitie we humblie take our leaves.

leaves. Written from the Forte att Plymoth this 12th of May 1600.

Your Lls. euer readie to be comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

CHR: HARRIS. RIC: HITCHENS,⁵⁸² Maiore.

Add: To the right ho: our verie good lls. the Lls of her Ma^{ts} most honorable
privie Councell. End: 1600 12 May. Mayor of Plymmothe S^r Far:
Gorges M^r Chr: Harrys to y^e Lls. wth th' examynacons of 3 younge gent:
bound for Spayne and taken by Cap^{en} Carpenter. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 4/22.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

My humbl duty remembreyd yt may plesse your ho^r
to understand the reson whie I apoynted not any sene
the writtinge of my ferst to geve atendanse upon your
ho^r: for the solisetynge of y^e wardshipe of the younge
Griffeth⁵⁸³ was for that I could not heyer by any menes
the fertenty of his estate and theyrfor forbor to be trublsum
unto your ho^r: untell I hade ashouranse what corsse was
fyttest for me to take in yt. but seyth yt hath pleseyd
you to votsafe me ashouranse of your ho^r fasor in that
bhallf I have of pourpas sent on for the fouling theyorof
and have geven comaundment that he should atend your
ho^r for your resolusion upon cnoulege from tym to tym
of the corsfe to be taken in thos afares wher in I my sellf am
astrainingor

⁵⁸² Richard Hitching, spelled also Hocking and Hutching. He was elected Mayor of Plymouth in 1599, at which time a new charter was granted the town.

⁵⁸³ George Griffith, with whom Gorges was afterwards associated in colonial enterprises.

astraingor and utterly ignorant. but in the mentym I do think my sellfe bound unto your ho^r that yt hath plesed you so Nobly to geve me your promyse of forderanse and fafore in that behalff protestinge that if yt may ever lye in my pouer by my serfyes to deserve by any menes your ho^r kindnes I will be as redey as he that

Your ho^r may comaund as your owne / FARD: GORGES.

yt may plesse your ho^r to give derexsion what shall be down wth the otheyr to who still remayneth heyer in preson atendinge theyer Lls. plesuer.

Holograph. Addressed. To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cicell knyght prinsepall Secretary to hur Mag^{ty} theyes wth spedē. End: July 1600. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my M^r. 1 p.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXV. No. 30.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONO^R: / Almost a day after that M^r Mayo^r had made his advertizm^t he gaue me notice of a certeyne French man that was arived heere whoe doth reporte that for trewth peter Sebenes is readie wth 25: faile of Fliboates full of souldiers, to goe as they giue yt out for Ireland. Yt seemeth in efecte to be a confirmation of the same w^{ch} somtyme fence yo^r hono^r receaued from hence: As alsoe that there is in Lisborne certeyne men of Warr readie to goe for the Wafting of the Carecks. But for that in my pore opinion I hould yt mor probable that they rather purpose to com upon these Westerne parts or that they will feeke to transporte those land

land men for the Low Countries, I thought yt fitt in dischardg of my bounden dutie to remember yo^r lo: how unfurnished we are heere, and unable wthout farther meanes to make defence against such Troopes as yt is possible for them to bringe in that propōtion of Shipping; What the defectes are the w^{ch} we stand in want of weare att my last being before yo^r Lls: made knownen. The seruice and comoditie y^t will ensfew by the safe defence of a place of this Ymporte is her Ma^{te}. And for my owne parte there can be noe more expected Att my handes then my honest and discreet endeuor^s, Yf that shall be wanting, I desier both punishm^t and shame to be inflicted upon me. And therefore unles yt may be Justlie laid unto my chardge that I did not from tyme to tyme upon all occasions of suspition or doubte giue notice thereof: — I doe agayne humblie entreat your hon^r that yt may please yo^u for godes cause, to be a meanes that supplie may be made of thinges necessarie: how great the prejudice and inconvenience would be, yf any thing should be offered and we not able to make resistance your hon^r in yo^r wisdom doth sufficientlie conceaue. A cheefe reason that perswadeth me that this preparation is rather intended for this place then any other, is, for that yt is certeynelie knownen that Peter Sebenes hath undertaken wth 25: or 30: faile of Fliboate to com to this place and to enter yt under the Collo^r of fleminge, and soe to seafe upon the Forte and strenghte, to burne the towne and Countrie neere adjoyning. And yf he shall see yt reasonable to hould them untill farther suplies may com, to fettle a Course for the Accomplishm^t thereof. Yf other wise to dismantle them and soe departe att theire pleafuer. this I protest upon my knowledg

knowledg they may doe yf by yo^r hono^{rs} meanes her Ma^{tie} be not perswaded to settle some course for the prevenſion thereof. I haue byn bould onlie to addrefſe my ſealfe in this behauſe unto your hono^r, for w^{ch} I humblie Craue pardon, Reffering unto yo^r graue wiſdom the conſideration thereof. And prayeinge unto the Almiſt for the increase of yo^r hono^r, I humblie take my leaue. Written From the forte of Plymoth this 15th of Julie 1600:

Yo^r hono^{rs} ever to be comaunded / FARD: GORGES.

End: To the right ho: S: Robert Cecyll knight principall Secretarie to her highnes./ An aduyce delyuered by a Frenchman of Sebures being ready wth xxvth fayle of Flyboats, full of men to come for Ireland./

(Cecil Papers 83/13.)

H. HEATH TO SIR F. GORGES.

SIRE Having ſo fitt conuenience I wolld not omet the writing althoſh my newes doth not import much yet your acoſtomed kindnes moves me to be ſtill defirewos to conuenew the ſame, for the wiſh porformanſes my good will ſhall ever followe you wiſh am not other wayes abell to pleſure you.

We are entred in to the broken ſtat of Irland wiſh ſtandes moſt despred and full of rebellyon the goverment is conuſed and covered with imperfectiones, everye ſtates man aposing him ſelf againſt the other ſo as god ſayth ſuch a kingdom canot ſtand in fewe wordes every man doth what he will and nevare one that wiſh he oughte, but right trew is it ſpoken the uphowlding of a feue is the over throw of many, and no greater enemie to great men then to much proſpertye for

for that it takes from them oft times all rewell⁵⁸⁴ of them selfes and makes them full of liberty and gives them bowldnes to do evell, not regarding that the envyous mynd doth mor harom to him self many times thene he wisheth hurt unto his enemye.

our entertainment hath binne as cowld as if theye wer forye for our cominge, ther wordes harsh ther lockes sowre ther derecktiones greveoues, the rest answarabell to thes inpenementes, the reson wher two much for so weck a man as my self to dispute of yet if I spend my opinyoune I trust I shall not be condemned of *you* althoough not beleved of many. Sir Samuell Bagnoll⁵⁸⁵ having the absolut comand of thes 2 thowsand men, a thinge unacostomed to the contrye and very unsavory to the Counsell of Irland licking. our Commander being a man not desirous to imparte with any of his atorytye but thingkes to governe him self accroding to the derecktiones of lafoylle, with out secking anythinge at ther handes wich the states of Irland canot indure. this makes them to lock sowr one us and gives noe countenantes to our men. plafeth us in the worst garesones and tombles our tropes up and downe hoping ther by in tim to breack us and allter our porpose wich I think thay may sounre breng to passe, if this be not so I am contented to be counted a lier upon condition that it prove no worse. all other our prosedinge this bearer Cap Jobe can fertefye you to the full. hom I will leav to mak report what I hav written is to the end

⁵⁸⁴ Rule.

⁵⁸⁵ Sir Samuel Bagnall was a follower of the Earl of Essex, and took an active part in the Cadiz expedition. After the capture of the city, September 15th,

1596, Essex in the first flush of victory knighted a number of his adherents on the field. Among these was Captain Samuel Bagnall, who was one of those wounded in the battle.

end to give you asurantes of my love and a gage of my good wille. thus leving you to the devynety of the all-myghty hom I desire ever to keap you.

Your most assured ever to comand / HUG: HEATH.

TREDOUGH in Irland the 6 of octob

Holograph. Add: To my honorabell and assurd good Frend Sir Ferdenando Goreges knighte comander of her mageste fort at Plemoth giv thes. End: Heath to Ferdinand Gorge. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers c. b. 2/65.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT Ho^r I have desyred by my best menes to intrest my self in to your ho^r faffor and good opinion, and yt hath plesede you of late as at otheyr tymes heyr to fore to make me taste of your kinde respete to me by what menes or how to mereyt yt I know not, unleffe yt will plesse you to make youse of my serfyce wherin you thinke yt worthy the imployment, in the men tym such is my unhapeynes as I mouft continualy mor and mor make my sellfe a trubl som futter to your ho^r, humbly desieringe that yt will plesse you to call to remembranfe my pore esstate the w^{ch} in soum parte I mad known to your ho^r at my last beinge wth you: That hath forsed me at this present to send up my wiffe (whos esstat I have spent) to passe my acountes for souch monyes as I have refeved of hur mag^t, and to shew for what shall goustly apeyer to be dewe unto me. in all the w^{ch} I bynd my sellfe uppon your ho^r faffor the rathor for that yt plesed you to votsafe to promyse your furderanfe unto hur mag^t for sumthinge tourdes my releffe

releffe, and the satisfynge of my credettore, for the w^{ch} I shall allwayes be bound to praye for your hapeyne[fs] and for ever to continew

Your ho^r at command /

FARD: GORGES.

Written from PLYMOUTH the 30 of October 1600.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cecyll Knyght, prinsypall Secretary to hur Magt and of hur highnes prevey Counsell. End: 1600 30 Oct: S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r From Plymmothe. 1 p.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXV. No. 139.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLESSE YOUR HO^r; This present daye I haue refued from difores perfones vnderstandinge of ferten spanesh men of war that ar uppon the cost to the number of 8 seyell theyer men ar most land men they haue taken of the Lezard a shipe of War and to barkes of Loo, and to botes of Sallaum wherof they funke the on and do deteyn the M^r but haue sete the mo^{ft} of the men ashore mor by soum that cam from S^t Marey porte⁵⁸⁶ and Cales; yt is reported that at Lissborn theyr ar 60. fayell of shipes full of men and redy to sete fayell, by this. yt is thought that they ether goo for the Low cuntreyes wth suplyes to the Cardenall,⁵⁸⁷ or ellse to atempte sumthing upon theis westorn partes, the Consideration wherof I humbly refere to your ho^{rs} wifdom humbly crauinge you to call to remembrāſe the wantes both of men and ſofefent menes

⁵⁸⁶ A ſeaport in Andalusia.

⁵⁸⁷ This was Albert, Cardinal Arch-

duke of Austria, mentioned elsewhere in these letters ſimply by his title.

menes for to defend this plasse if hapely they shoulde geue any atempte uppon yt: of this much acordinge vnto my duty I thought my sellfe bound to geue your ho^r advertisement of restinge allwayes redy to make manyfest my honest indevor and senseys to your ho^r as on that is faythfully/

Your ho^rs to be comaunded / FARD: GORGES.

From PLYMOUTH this 13. of desember 1600 :

End: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cecyll knight prensepall secretary to her Ma^t and of her most ho^r prevey Consell geue theyes. 13 Decembr. 1600. S^r ferdinando Gorges to my M^r from Plymouth / 8 Dunkerkers on the Cost of Cornwall. A ship of foy taken by thē.

(Cecil Papers 83/78.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF NOTTINGHAM AND
SIR R. CECIL.

MAY YT PLESSE YOUR LL. to the fowerthe⁵⁸⁸ for my mor ashouranse to provaylle in diffwadinge the enterpryse of the Cort, I proved a inposiblety to a complysh yt wth any menes that they hade at that tym, spesually for that yt was not to be doubted but that the alarum was so taken that the gardes wer strenned⁵⁸⁹ so as beinge disapoynted of the ferst they should be left wth out hope, to this theyer was no contredixfion.

by me / FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r my very good ll the Erell of Notengm L high Admarall of England and S^r Robert Cessell prinsepal secretary to hur Mag^t geue theyes. End: S^r Ferd: Gorge. 160⁰ abt Feb 10. (?) $\frac{1}{2}$ p.

⁵⁸⁸ The fourth question propounded to him relative to the Essex rebellion.

⁵⁸⁹ Strengthened.

(Cecil Papers 186/56.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R. if yt plesse you to coumaund me to coume to your ho^r when S^r Wallter Ralley and your ho^r will apoynt, to be to getheyr in soum convenient plasse, yt maye be I shall faye that I cannot write w^{ch} will be mor avayllable then any thinge I have or cann goustly subscrybe unto. if you plesse so to thinke well yt will be best this nyght for if I be not defeved yt will be to late to morow. in the mentym I humbly coumend your ho^r to the protexfion of the allmyghty restinge most unfaynedly duringe lyffe

Your ho^r at comand / FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Ceiffell knight prensepall secretary to hur Magesty. End. S^r Ferd: Gorge to my L. $\frac{1}{2}$ p.

(State Papers, Dom. Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CCLXXXIII.A, No. 33.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^R. At my last beinge wth your hon^r it semed to me that I was of nesecity to resoulfe my sellfe to roun soum foren or newe hope if it be soo, that my Enemyes, and my ounde misfortuenes haue soo mouch prevailed against me, it resteth then of my parte, humbly to intreat that by your ho^{rs} meanes (for by it I haue bin made most hapey in all my troubles) Hur Highnes may be aduertised how submisifly and gratfuly I haue Exceptted Hur free and Princly Parden and How Carfull I willbe to seeke by all meanes to deserue soo high and grafues a faffour: Secondly

how forowfull I am that I was boren so vnhapey, to suffor my sellfe to be foo fare mifled, by aney ouer-weninge confayte, or fond affection to geue foo highe and gouſt occasion of offence to foo grafues and beninge a suffrand: ſpesualy in a matter of that Natuer, foo contrarey to my diſpoſition Purpos and Profefion: Thurdly howe greues it is unto me that after the expence of ſo maney yeres in hur Highnes ſerfes, ſo much bloud lost, and my holle estate wasted, I ſhoulde now be forſed to ſecke to rayes a newe foundaſion under a forin Prince, and in a ſtrainege naſion, Eſpeſhually hauing by hur Mag^{ts}. grafues fafores beſtoued uppon me heyr to fore, in abled my ſellfe to exicut thos duties that may be requiered at my handes, And laſtly that it is no fantasticall Discontent or Iddell hummor that makes me ſubgete my ſellfe to a willingenes to loue my Countre and my Souereintes ſerfes. For the God of Heuen duth know (whom I take to recorde) that they ar bothe moſt preſhues unto me of any worly reſpect, But it is ondly the Extremety of my ound preſent wantes, and the diſpayer I haue of my meanes vnable to reſiſt the vncharetalbe males of my fallfe, Clandrингe and bake bitinge Enemyes whos poueres ſemes to ſwaye the greatenes of my frindes and theyer ſaffouer to me, But I truſt that God will ſo derecte my Corſe and me in my atemptes, that hur highnes ſhall deſeren theyer perſiduſ delinge, and my frindes repe honor and thankes of hur for theyer carfull loues touredes me.

What I haue mor to ſaye before I ſerternly reſoullſe wth my ſellfe what corſe to take, Concernes my loue and reſpecte in perticolor vnto your honor, and therfore that
theyer

theyer may be wantinge in me, no offes of duty and loue,
to so kinde and worthey a parson, I humbly desier it maye
plese you to afine me soum tyme when your honeres lafor
may best serue to geue my attendans vpon you, when it
may be laffull, for a free, faithfull and honest speret, to
discouer him sellfe, and his particolor affexsion wthout of-
fenc, wher in, I resoullfe to make it apere, that I pourpose
not, basly to roun the corant of the tim, to serfe my present
tourn, after the fashion of this age wher in wee leue, but
to folow my ound natuer, and resolutely to rife, or fall
wth the fortuen of my frindes. and princely thos, that
hath bound me to them, by ashurances of faffores reseued,
prosedinge from a vertues natuer, and a hon^r disposition,
and such is the obligacion by which I stand for Euer
bound to be

Your honores at Coumaund /

I beche you to inquier of this berer the reson whie I
caure not my sellfe to haue performed this dutey by worde
of mouth and to returne me by him such aunfor as your
wisdum shall thinke me worthey of for the tim hastenes,
and nefesity is be yend all lawe,

FARD: GORGES.

written the 18 of feburary. /

End: To the Right hon^r S^r Robert Cycelle knight Princepall Secretary to hur
Mag^{te} geue thes / S^r Ferdinando Gorges 1600. /

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 83/87.)

EXAMINATION OF SIR F. GORGES.

EXAM^M of S^r Ferdenando Gorge knight taken the 18 of Febr. 1600.

He confesseth that the Erle of Essex sent him upon the Tuesday as he takethe it before the day of the open Rebellion, unto Drewry howse to a Conference w^{ch} was appointed between the Erle of Southampton and other gent^z whos opinōn and resolutiō the Erle desyered to have upon certain articles w^{ch} he would send to be proposed unto them. He Repayred thether accordingly, and fownd at Drewry howse the Erle of Southampton S^r Charles Danvers,⁵⁹⁰ S^r Jhon Davyes,⁵⁹¹ and Jhon Littleton⁵⁹² Esq^r, S^r Jhon Davyes brought the Propositons all of the hand writing of the Erle of Essex and wth all a Cathologue of the names of Divers Erles, Barons and Gent^z that he made accoumpt of would adhere unto him, to the nomber in all of six score or ther abouts.

The articles and propositions of w^{ch} they were to advise,
and

⁵⁹⁰ Sir Charles Danvers was a descendant of Roland D'Anvers, a companion of the Conqueror. He was a friend of Essex, and on account of his participation in the treason of that nobleman, was attainted and suffered death at the hands of the headsman; a privilege allowed only to noblemen, and which at his urgent request was "graciously" permitted by the Queen.

⁵⁹¹ Sir John Davis was one of the knights created by Essex in Ireland, and by the Earl's influence was ap-

pointed Surveyor of Ordnance in the Tower of London. By his connection with Essex he was involved in that nobleman's conspiracy against the government, and suffered death therefor with other confederates in treason.

⁵⁹² John Littleton was of a good family, which was feated at Frankley, Worcestershire. He was involved in the Essex rebellion, and was attainted of treason, but escaped the scaffold by dying in prison immediately after his condemnation.

and set down ther opinons, were thre the first was to feas upon the Cowrt,

2. to feas upon the Towar
3. and to seafe upon the Cyty,

That of the Towar was propownded also double-wife whether it were better to seafe upon the Cowrt and the Towar bothe at one tyme, or first of the one, and after on the other,

These propositons were debated and every man did deliver and set down his opinion, wth was collected in writing and after the Erle did himself Resolve upon them, and set down his Resolution in writing:

The manner how he should seafe upon the Cowrt was in this fort, Ther should be sent thether before dispersedly of his confederates to the nomber of ⁵⁹³ besydes ther followers, who should repayr some to the hall, some others to the great chamber, an other nomber to the Presence Chamber, some should be placed in the loby and some at the gates To the Presence Chamber S^r Charles Davers was appointed, S^r Ihon Davyes to the hall, and S^r xstofer blunt ⁵⁹⁴ as he takethe it to the gate, him self to the gate by the Preching Place.

These

⁵⁹³ Blank in manuscript.

⁵⁹⁴ Sir Christopher Blount was a descendant of the noble family of Mountjoy, and received knighthood at the hands of Lord Willoughby in the Netherlands, where he was serving at the time. He was conspicuous in the Cadiz expedition, and after the death of Leicester married his widow, Lettice Knollys, cousin to Elizabeth, and before her marriage with Leicester, the widow of Walter, Earl of Essex. He was there-

fore stepfather of Robert, Earl of Essex, and it was his violent counsel which hurried the unfortunate Earl into the treasonable course which resulted in the destruction of both. On the scaffold Sir Christopher besought the pardon of Raleigh, whose ruin he had sought with great vindictiveness, and was generously forgiven by the brave man, whom, upon one occasion, he had even attempted to assassinate.

These confederates being thus disposed then a watche word should be given or signall, and at that instant every of the forenamed knights should sease on the place to w^{ch} he was appointed wher they had hope to fynd diuers others besydes them selues indifferently affected by w^{ch} tyme the Erle of Effex would be Ready to enter into the Cowrt and accompanyed wth the Erles and Barons in his Company would present him self unto the Q^{ne}. That don some should be sent unto the Cyty of London, to give them satisfacton of his doings. It was also agreed that the Captayn of the Guard should be seased on at the same tyme in such Place wher he should be, and the lyk don of some other Cownsellors,

This being executed then they had projected to call a parliament in w^{ch} those they counted advers against them should haue their tryall.

End: 18 Feb. 1600 S^r Ferdinando Gorge. 1½ pp.

(Cecil Papers 85/173.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R I fynde that you have dellt both nobly and most ho^r wth me and myne in this tym of my mifaryes: for you were the ferst that gave me any ashouranfe of Cumfort, so you have continued your fafor unto this present, in that I understand you were the menes I haue reseved the lyberty of the prifon, w^{ch} I ashour you is no small Cumfort to a destrefed mynde: Taftinge the grettnes of your faffor, I do acnoulege my sellfe infenetly bounde unto your ho^r, and do presume humbly to intrete the continuans theyerof: I am not ignorant

rant that theyer is no protestationes yt I cann mak will be a sofesent Justefeycasion or Cleringe of me, for the aparanse of the Evell I am in question for, wherfor, my petiffion unto you is y^t yt will plesse you to votesafe to take Cnoulege of my sorofull and penetent harte for my offense unto hur Grasus Magestey and my drede soferant, whom I acnoulege to haue ofended in no small mesuer, whos mersey and pardon, I do presum most humbly to crave uppon my kneffe from daye, to daye, and that you will votsafe to ad to your ho^r furderanfe and best indever for my acomplishment theyerof; and if yt may be (thorow hur grasure and wonted Clemensey) obtayned, I hope by the pour of the all myghty god to make yt a peyer⁵⁹⁵ bothe unto hur highnes and the holl worelld that yt is not extended unto a ungratfull or dishonest man; and I do farder promyfse, nay I dar protest that your ho^r will finde that netheyr your fafor unto me, nor your forderanfe of my good to be frustrete, if so be yt any resonable corfe may be taken for the uphouldinge of my repetasian. other wayfe I shall as sone desyer to dye as to live, for I am not in love wth my lyffe, nor would I seke to live were it but for my owne sак, for I have allwayes prefered a levinge dethe, before a dinge lyffe. what estate I have gotten in this my . 16 . yeres serfes, is (I ashour myself) made knownen unto your ho^r, so as yt duth apeyer, my offten coumplaintes of my poverty, and mysary, was unfained: but may I ever be made so hapey as onse mor to ingoye my libertey; what wellth shall be myn, or what worth is in me, I do desier by all the oblygationes of an honest man, to dedigete

⁵⁹⁵ Appear.

dedigate to your love and serfes, if yt may plesse you to make me so hapey as to exsepte theyerof. theyer is sumthinge for w^{ch} I desier to speke wth your ho^r when yt shall plese you to think yt fyt to coummaund me to waite uppon you: in the men tym I will seffe to trubl you any farder, but Continew to praye for your everlastinge hapenes and rest my sellffe duringe liffe.

Your ho^r to be Coumaunded / FARD: GORGES.

Aprell 22 from the gathouse.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r, Robert Ciesell Knyght prinsepall secretary to hur Magestey. End: 1601 April 22. S^r Fardinando Gorges to my M^r i p.

(Cecil Papers 86/11.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R: for that the tym duth passe and I understand by my wiff yt plesSED your ho^r to delle so nobly wth me as to lete me in part to know what is obgettēd agaynst me, for w^{ch} I may deserfe blame. ferst that I delte not so frely as I myght have donn in delyfiringe my cnoulege of my L. of Essexe his prosedinges: I beche you to waye the shorttnes of the tym, the difors cares, mysereyes, and aflyksiones, that I was sodenly inwrapped in, w^{ch} myght be sofe feint to cause a man to forgete sumthinge amounst many yt I dide frely delyfer my cnoulege of all when I was demaunded of yt, if yt may plese you to Consider the bond of love and frinchship all though you did beleve I was willinge to consell what myght pregudish him, the noblenes of your owne natuer I know will

will excuse me in your hart allbe yt in the severety of your goufeyes you may condeme me: but I farder heyer that he hath charged me wth a letter I wrate unto him and perswasions I should youse unto him theyer by to urge him unto this untimblly and tresonabl enterpryse as for the Letter I remember my L: Ad: (uppon occasion that the Erell toke to speke of yt) urged him in the behaufe of the rest of the lls to resoullfe them of the contense theyerof wher uppon he replyed that upon his fallvasion I never wrate unto him any mateyr tending to treson: heyer upon I prayed him to remembeyr the othe I sware him unto befor I would goyne wth him in any thinge, w^{ch} he Lykewayes acnoulage. the efecte wherof was, the presorvasion of his alegense to the Q. and continuanse of the publyke pesse, and theyerfor yt could not be that I perswaded him to that w^{ch} by othe I bound him from, theyer myght passe many wordes or speeches from me to him by waye of argoment or confaranse, but to conclude that theyerfor theye wer advises or counfall your ho^r duth know wer a meyer rouge for yt is aparrant when yt cam to be resoulfed on what my counfall was: But my L. myght beleve when he faue me to be theyer and hard my Confesyon ferst rede that I ondly had discovereyd his secretes and betrayed him theyerfor out of his dislyke of my prosedings myght willingly speke what he thought myght do me hurt. how hevy a inmputasyon he hath layde uppon me in the opinion of the worelld, for requitall of my love unto him I heyer unto my greffe. but I am sory and ashamed that he hath concluded so disnobly & dishonarably, yt be cause your ho^r shal know as well my begininge wth him as you have

dune my end, as allso for y^t my L: Ad: charged me in your prefense that his L. had bin my menes to gete me the forte of plymouthe. when I was at the brille the Erell sent to me a gentⁿ wth his letters gevinge me to understand what he had doun for me if I lyked if yt & befor I retourned my aunfor or reseved theyer Lls letteres for my couminge into Inglan he sent another advertisinge me to coum over, in this whille he hade dellte wth my deyer frende S^r Conores Clyfford whom he hade ingaged for my faythfull and ashowred love unto him from all otheyr men, this was not sufisent in his confayt but he so provided that I was ferst to speke wth him befor any otheyr of the lls. after I aryfed and understandinge what had passed from my frind in my behalfe I was in honesty bound to make yt good. wth accordingly I did, after wardes I desyered to carey my sellfe in a indifrent corfe, but persevinge his geluse youmor⁵⁹⁶ I saue it not posible wth out loffinge of him unto hom I had geven my sellfe as for your ho^r the opefison was so aparant betwen you to, as theyer was no posibelyty for me to intrest my sellfe in your ho^r wth out abgouring of him, and so mouſt have manyfested my dishonest youmor, and ficall disposifon. Theyerfor I beche your ho^r not to estem the worse of me for my conſtent lovinge him that was your enemey.

I vowe to god that I did indevor by what menes I was able the reconſillation of your ho^r and him. but he anſored me that he would reſeve no good from you or by your menes, the truth of this his ſoule cann teſteſey.

theyerfore

⁵⁹⁶ Jealous humor.

theyerfore if yt plesse you to take me to your faffaoor
and protexfion that am now coumfortles, as I haue but
on hart so I haue but on worde the w^{ch} I coumend unto
your worthey sellfe to be disposed of as yt shall plesse you
and do offore my sellfe most faythfully and trully at
Your ho^r serfes duringe lyffe /

FARD: GORGES.

from the gathous this 27 of Aprell.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cicefell Knight prinsepall Sec-
retarey to hur Magestey. End: 1601 27 Aprill S^r Ferd: Gorge. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 182/33.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONARABL: althothing yt be a thinge agaynst a
worthey natuer to importuen his honarable frindes, yt my
extrem nefesiteyes ar so greate at this presencs that I am
forsed, not ondly to strayne the bouenes of vertewe, but to
passe the lymetes of good manores, humbly beching your
honor to excues the on, & by your honarabl meanes (for
in that I depend) to pout a nende unto the other, for (in
fewe wordes) yt is so greater, yⁿ canne wth leffe be indewered,
if I wer hopples of soum present ende, and mor then wth out
shame of my parte canne be spoken of, save to your honor,
whom I ashouer my sellfe, wilbe as helpfull as petyfull
(nowe you knowe yte) I men in obtaining for me hur Mag^{ts}:
Graſues Parden, that I maye ingoye that hapenes, at the
leſt, to deye a free man if I may not leve to optayne the
meanes by my selves afexfion, faithfull and trewe serfes, to
indeuer to deserve so greate a graſe of hur highnes, al-
though

though yt wer wth the losse of my dereſt blude, and to manefest unto your honor, (which I doupte not but to be able to do, when you pleſe to votefafe the opportunety to heyear me), that trewe & unfayned afexſion that your honarable ſoule canne defier to poſeffe of a free and conſtant natuer that hatteth to protest what hee intendeth not, and whom you have bound unto you as he whom is

Yor honeres moſt to be coumaunded/

FARDE: GORGES.

Maye 2.

Holograph. Add: To the Right hor: S^r: Robert Ciefell Knight Prinſepall Cecretarey to hur Mag^t M^r of the wardes, and of hur Moſt honarable preve Counſele geve theſe. End: 21 May 1601 ⁵⁹⁷ S^r Fardinand Gorges to my M^r I p.

(Cecil Papers 182/69.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R. The keper hath bin importunat wth me, for mones for my charges: as longe as I had any thinge lefft I did make fatesfaxſion unto him from weke to weke. What my eſtate is I have ofte tymes aquainted your ho^r I have neyther entartaynment nor anythinge ellſt left. what I ſhall do or what menes I ſhall make to mayntayn my wiffe and children god duth know, ſpesualy whill I am in this plafe. for my frendes not knowinge the termes I ſtand in ar ferfull to take notes of me leſt they ſhould undo them ſellfes: my petiſion is Theyerfor unto your ho^r: that yt will pleſſe

⁵⁹⁷ The "1601" is in another hand, pasted over; but the year seems probable and I cannot decide whether it is a contemporary endorsement, as it is

pleffe you the por man may refeve sum kind of fatesfaxfion such as in your wisdum you shall thinke fyte to yelld him. and that yt will plesse you to aforde me such coumfort as maye refresh (in sum mesuer) a distressed and myfarabl wrecke whom if you plesse you maye youse to your ound good and ho^r. and to my content and esse, for all though I cannot shew my sellfe serfely base yt I will aprofe my sellfe thankefull. for I know wher in you myght have doun me hurte and I fynd wherin you have dune me good. for the w^{ch} you have bound me to indever to deserfe yt. in the mentym you shalle have experenes that I will be unfaynedly at

Your ho^r comand during my lyffe /

From the gathouse the 27 of June.

FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Ciffell prinsepal Secretary to hur Mag^t geve theyes. End: 27 Junii 1601. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 182/99.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R. I humbly desyer your ho^r pardon for my importunetey. nefesitey duth imforse ether aboufe good manores or sevelitey: my mysereyes is best knownen unto my sellfe for if I wer presently to be discharged I know how harde yt will be for me to defraye my charge in the house. as for my frindes thos that ar kinde have no money the rest wante netheyer excuses or resones to kepe theyer moneyes in theyer purses: when theyer was hope of my uprisinge, or liklyhoud that my repetasian or fasor wth my ho^r frendes myght do them good, yt hade bin no harde matter for me to

to have ingaged them verey fare (as yt hath bin the coustum of Inglysh frendes or sellfe loufores) but now they see no liklyhoud of any such matter, theye ar content to sem both straynge and unwillinge: wherfor I humbly beche your honarable confidarasion heyrof, and that befor I have cause to dispayer, Sum resolusion maye be optayned wher unto I shall truste. for my ound part my soulle was ever free from malyes unto any: and what my ofense is god and my conchens duth know: I haue lost mouch bloud in hur mag^{ts}: serfes. and have spent my holl tym theyerin as allfo that pore estate I hade and all otheyer menes that any wayes I could make. my indever and desyer in all this was, to have deserfed better then wotheyeres⁵⁹⁸ but my over weninge afexfion unto my unfortunate frend, hath frustreated my hopes theyer in, yt I cannot dispayer, because I know the frenes of my harte and clerenes of my conchense that could never be draune to condefent to any villey servell course, or trecherus prattyes all though I cannot excuse this my offens to hur mg^{ty}: I have offred my sellfe to be disposed of by your ho^r: if you plese to exsepte of yt, you shall fynd that I will endever to deserve the gretnes of your fafors dun me. I beche you to know that I am not unsensable of reson or ignorant, who cann do me good or evell: and thos fafores w^{ch} I have refed, I know that they have not bin hindred by your ho^r: at this present I have apoynted my Cousen Doddington⁵⁹⁹ to geve his atendens and humbly to desyer your ho^r aunfor what resolusion

⁵⁹⁸ Others.

⁵⁹⁹ Sir William Doddington. He was

High Sheriff of Hampshire, and died in

1638.

resolusion or hopes you thinke I am to depend uppon: though for my ound part I cann desyer nothin but a short ende to thes my myesareyes: that will rest if ever I maye be my selffe

Your ho^r humbly to be comanded / FARD: GORGES.

from the gat hous this 11th of Julye.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r Robert Cessell Knyght prinsepall Sec-
retareye to hur Magesty: thes dd. End: 11 July 1601 S^r Ferdinando Gorges
to my M^r 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 180/137.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE I perceyve by my Cousen Doddinton, yt hath pleased you to excepte, at that parte of my lettre, wherby I acknowledge your ho^r to haue bine noe hinderer, of those mercyfull, and honorable fafoores, I have receyved: wherfor I houlde my selfe bound; to geve a true Interpretation unto your ho^r; of my meaninge ther in: to the end to take away all doubt, or cause of Jealousye, of any unwillingnes in me to attrybute unto you, that w^{ch} your ho^r: by your favorable menes haue bounde me, to indevore to deserve; And theyerfore I beseeche you to be out of doubte, that my meaninge was noe otherwayes; but as you were noe hinderer, soe you ar by me, and my freindes, to be acknowledged, to be the gretest furtherer, and menes of any favore, or good, that I have eyther receyved, or am in expetacion of. wherfore for that cause, and to geve testimonye theyerof I have desyred soe often, and by soe many meanes, to dispose both of my selfe, and my best indeavores, at your plesuor; and

and only to your honor before any man what soever; for unto none haue I soe freely offred my selfe; as to yo^r ho^r: sense these my troubles, w^{ch} is not doun out of any other respete, then out of my desiere, to indevor to the uttermouſt of my power, to requite thos faffores, I acknowlege my selfe to have receved from you, and by your menes: and therfore my humble desyre is, that this maye be a fattysfaxſion to your ho^r: for that wherin I might forgett my selfe, in my laſt: beſeechinge your ho^r: to have in Conſyderaſion, how eaſye a matter yt is, for a man plunged in ſoe many myſſeryes, as I am in, to be miſtakene in ſuſh a matter as that was; wherin my meaninge was (I vowe to god) noe otherwayes, then by this I have acknowledged yt to be. And therfor I humbly desyer you, to continue your ho^r: faſvor towardes me; unto whom I desyer princepallye under hur Highnes; to be behouldinge unto; for any eaſe or good, that I am in expeſtaſion or hope of: the w^{ch} I beſeech you to advance, out of your ho^r: diſpoſition; to geve Coumforte to the affliſted, and miſarable, levinge my ſelfe to be diſpoſed of duringe lyfe at

Your ho^r: Coummande / FARD: GORGES.

From the gathous 14 of Julye.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r S^r: Robert Ciffiell Knyght prinſipall ſec-
retarye to her Mageſty. End: 14 July 1601. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r
2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 182/136.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT ho^r My myſſery is ſoo grete, as I cannot forbere
humbly to intrete your ho^r to have conſideraſion of yt, and

as

as you have bin hether unto most ho^r in the helpinge and faforinge of me, so you will be plesed to contynew the grettnes of your fafour tourdes me that will souffer my sellfe to dispayer exsepte yt may plese you to aforde me your ho^r coumforte. I protest I have not any menes to be at the charge of on to atend the Corte, and theyerfor what to do or how to do I know not. but onelly to hop that yt will plese your ho^r by your faforable menes to me, that I may be made as hapey as otheres that ar fallty as I am. Wherby I protest you shalle bynd me as absolutly to you as on whom your ho^r maye be most ashoured of

duringe my lyfe / FARD: GORGES.

From the gathous this 7th of Augoust.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r: Sr Robert Ciffell kng: prinsepall Secretarey to hur Magesty. End: 1601 Aug. 7. S^r Fardinando Gorges to my M^r.
I p.

(Cecil Papers 183/44.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^R: I haue reseved cnowlege by so good menes of your ho^r and most efettuall delinge wth hur Ma^{te}. for me, and in my behallfe, as I fynde my sellfe bound to acknowlege the grettnes of your fafore by all the menes I shall ever be able and in the mentym do yelde you all posible thankes for yt: most humbly be^rching⁶⁰⁰ you to fenesh that good worke you have be goune wher by you have bound both me and myn, to do you all ho^r: and servise that shall ever be in our

⁶⁰⁰ Befeeching.

our poures: And seinge yt hath plefed hur Ma^{tie}: to extend hur grafe and mersey thus far: so yt maye lykewayes plesse hur not to sofor me to deye a thousen dethes in bondige and myfarey but that thorow the exfalensey of the sam mersey I maye relishe the swetenes theyerof, nothinge douptinge (by the helpe and grafe of the eternall god) but, I shalbe able to geve testymony to the worelld, that yt is not extended to a ungratfull or extrem unworthey parson. I am not the ferst that haue offended, though yt be the ferst ofense I ever coumytted justly to be layde unto my charge, how forey I am and how mouch I loth my selff fore it the heavenly god duth know whos eternall blefinge and everlastinge protexfion be upon you and youres for the Coumfort I have reseved by your menes.

Your ho^r for ever to be coumanded /

FARD: GORGES.

The gat house this 24 of Septembre.

Holograph. Add: To the Right honorabl S^r Robert Cieffell Knight Prinsipall Cecretary to hur Ma^{tie} geve theyes. End: 24 Sept 1601. Sir Fardinando Gorges to my M^r 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 89/28.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONARABL I have bin geven to understand by S^r Thomas Gorges the contynuanse of your honarabl and kinde fafor tourdes me, the which as yt duth profede from a most exfcelent and nobl natuer, out of Comeferasian and petey of a most myfearable and unfortenat man soe is yt my dutey to take notes of yt, and by all menes to indever to deforve

deforve the grettnes theyer of, as far forth as shall lye in foe
weke a pouer as is in me, in the mentym I cannot chous
but to geve your ho^r: all posibl thankes for yt and most
humbly to beche you to pout a nend to your worthey worke
that as well in my bodey as my soule I may make manyfest
the oblygacion wher in I accnoulege my sellf to stand bound
to your honor for the grettnes of thos fafores I haue re-
feved by your menes, in the mentym I will contynualy
praye to the etternall god, to make you as hapey as your
harte cane desyer, and for ever contynewe

Your honores most humbly to be coumanded /

FARD: GORGES.

from the gathous 29 of October.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r: S^r Robert Ceiffell Knyght prinsse pall
Cecretry to hur Ma^{te} geve thes. End: 1601 October 29 S^r Fard. Gorges to
my Mr. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 89/74.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONARABL, yt is to no ende for me to goe about
to lesten or diminesh the grete and huenesnes of my of-
fense unto hur Ma^{te}, seing it is foe apparant unto all at
whos grafues handes I haue refeved soe greate and infenet
fafour in pardinnge of my lyffe and preseveringe of my
blude from beinge taynted, as theyer is no servis or indever
of myn wilbe able to deserve y^e gretenes theyerof. Not wth
standinge I humbly desyer that this Considerafion may be
had (being I protest to the hevenly god but the truth) that
yt was loufe unto my frind, and no malies unto any earthly
creatuer

creatuer that caused me to do as I did, wher into I was fallen yer I was aware, but beinge in I wold willingly (I mouſt confes) haue rought his fredum that was the cause theyerof, to gether wth my ound ſafty yf it hade bin posibl. as for my aleganſe to to my ſofarant, or honest afexſion to my contrey, lete my tyme and lyfe paſt make aunſor for me, and for this axfion that hath cauſed my reuin (under corexſion) as I was not alone, who was hee that was not merly opoſed to the Erell that myght not haue bin drauen to goyne wth him as I did, and in truth I will deſyer to leve no longer then that I ber a loyall hart unto hur Ma^{te} and my Countrey, but in my to mouch loufe to my unfortenat frind I know I gave juſte occaſion for your hon^r to exſepte againſt me, and to laye uppon me your diſafor, or to drawe from me your affexſion, but ſeing by expeſience I am tought my error theyerin and am both aſhamed and harteley ſorey that ever your hon^r: hadde ſoe juſte cauſe of exſepcion or diſlyke unto me, I humbly and ernestly intret your honor to pout all paſt out of your memorey, ſend to loake wth a neye of love and petey uppon me, whom you have bothe conqueſed and gayned in all trew and faythfull ſervis to you for ever, and ſeinge that your ound ho^r: and charetey geves me aſhourans that you will not regeſte⁶⁰¹ me because I am in aſlixiſion (for that it is a chefe eſecte of Criſten pietey to menefter ſuker to a man in neſeſitey) yt maketh me the boulder to remember you of the myſarabl eſtate and aſlixiſion wherin I leve: humbly becechinge your honor, to be amenes to worke hur Ma^{tes} coumpaſcnet harte as in graſe and merſey ſhe hath bine plefed to ſafe my lyfe, fo

now

⁶⁰¹ Reject.

now she will votesafe to pout a nend to my Calametey by gevinge libertey and fredum, that I maye by the hafford of that lyffe or losse of my dereft blud indever to ransoum my mysse dede, as allsoe yt I may theyerby aprove to the wordl how mouch I houlde my sellfe bound to your honor for thos faffores and benefyctes I and myn have reseved by your ho^r menes, unto whom if I coulde as frelye speake wthout jelosey of feking to serve my ound turn as I am ernestly defyrues, you wold hapely fynde reson to faye I haue nether any dishonest natuer nor am a unworthey man but I dar urge your honnor to no mor then your wifdoum shall think fyt, but will allwayes be redey and most ashoured during lyfe.

Your honnores to be Coumanded /

FARD : GORGES.

The 5 of November from the gathous.

Holograph. Add: To the Right honrabl S^r Robert Ceiffell knight Prinsepall Crecetarey to hur Ma^{te} geve thes. End: 1601 November 5 S^r. Fardinando Gorges to my m^r from the Gatehowse. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 183/108.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONAR^L, I understand by my unkell S^r Thomas Gorges howe far forth it hath plesed him (by my often and ernest solisitasion and his carfull and kinde desier to have it so) to ingage bothe his and my love and servies to you in particolor, in retourn of thos hon^r, faffoures and kindenes we have reseved by your meanes. Theyerfor resoullving wth my sellfe to make good all what so ever he hath promisid in my

my behallfe; I do ashauer my sellfe; so fare forth as you have votsafed to exsepte theyer of, to reseve a fafforable aunfor by your menes, to this my humbell petision, nothinge doutinge (if I be not mouch deseved) but that theyer resteth suficent pouer to satisfye my holl demand, or at leste, the gretest part ther of, the rather for that otheres of the ~~hs~~^hs^p have allwayes promyfed me undotedly to farder all that lies in theyer poueres, accnouleging I have deserved no lesse, if I may find theyer nobell dedes anforabl to theyer kind and honarabl wordes, I shall thinke my sellfe the hapier by so mouch: As conferninge the restitusion of my plasse spoken of in my petision, it was the ~~hs~~ letteres that did disposses me theyer of at the ferst, when I offended, and seeinge hur Mag^t; hath so frely and grafsly pardened me, I knowe no reson but they have still the sam vertewe to reposses me theyerof agayne, espesually if theyer shall be any nesesity, to imploye the faythfull serfice of a nonest man: I will forbere to truble your ho^r: aney farder in this, and do refer my sellfe to your love and wissedum, and I would be glade (if the tim befit for it) to speke my pore opinion of the present estate of the time, inas mouch as I am theyer unto insited by natuer, love, and duty for it is to apparrant to the worell, the meserey and calamety that begenes to aproch, and the mor spase is lost the gretter will the afflixfiones be when it do falle, for you shall find all distempred, and the holle bodey out of frame, and everey sensabl member ther of do begin to trembell, Therfor, souffor not your sellfe to be surprised in security, but provide for what may infewe, whill you have menes, and pouer: I do knowe your wissdum, and vertew, the which hath

hath made me to presuem to straye this fare be yonde my sellfe: pardon me theyerfore, I houmblly beche you if I have coumited any fallt and lete it be imputed to love not presumfion.

I pourpas to be this night at Sher if your hon^r: plesse to coumaund me to attend uppon you I will fenesh the rest that I have to faye by worde of mouth, and will continew to be

Your honores most ashoured to be Coumaunded /
FARD: GORGES.

Holograph. Add: To the Right ho^r: S^r Robert Ciefell knight Princepal Sec-
retarey to hur Mag^{ty} geve thes. End: S^r Ferdinando Gorges. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 181/94.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONARABL: Whill I leve under this greate cloud of hur Ma^{ts}. hevey indignasian I am but as a shadowe and no substanes or rather a deadde man bothe to mysellfe and to the worelld, my soull levinge in torment to see how I have trubled vexsed and charged my frindes, brought into extremetey my sellfe my wiffe and chilldren, and (which of all wotheres is most greves unto me) I have (thorow my myfs demenuer) loste that bright lite of hur Ma^{ts}: grafues fafour wth all hope of aney preefent good in my countreye, being bereved of all manor of meanes safe my pore indever the which shall never be wantinge to recover the on or to deserue of the wother, but of all thos I am most bound unto under god and hur Ma^{ty}: I moust and will for ever aknoulege your honor the ferst and Cheffest, and I beche
your

your ho^r: to exsepte of this my confesyon as not profeding of a basse or servell youmor as if I ondly ment by obseruinge the tyme to serve my ounde tourne, but to exsepte of yt as profedinge from a honest faythfull and free harte, how soum ever the bodey be captfyfed, nor shall any fortuen ever make me to goo against my sellfe in this, and when soum ever by your ho^r fafor and meanes (for wthout it I will nether seke or hope for any thing) I shalbe free and able, your ho^r: shall find you never bestoued your love uppon aneye man that shall mor honestly or mor faythfuly indever the deserving of yt. Yt wer beyond the boundes of modestye or disreccsion to brage of my sellfe or to take uppon me mor then is knownen to be in otheres, but my desier is, to spende yt letell remnant of my liffe that remainneth, in hur Ma^{ts}. and my Countreyes servise, to y^e yende that I maye preasently indever, the ransoming of my error to bothe as allsoo, the better to geve fatesfaxsion and ashouranes to your honor, that I desier and resoullfe to accomplish my wordes wth my deedes, but if it be not posseble, to remove hur Ma^{ts} hevey indignezion from me, wherby I shalbe thought unworthey hur grases imploymet, but shalbe forsed to seke my fortuen out of my natyfe Countrey, I most humbly beche your honor to be my meenes, yt may be acompleshed wth what expedition shall (in your wisdoum) be thoght conveneant, I have presumyd to intret my unkell S^r Thomas Gorges and have apoynted my wiffe at tymes convenient, to geve atendanes uppon your ho^r: that you may have occasion to remember the myfarabl estat I leve in, being over chargabell to my frendes, and in forsed to see my wiffe and children redey

to

Sir Ferdinando Gorges.

113

to starfe, and no menes lefte to requite the on, or to releve the other, and what fortuen soum ever I roun or wher soum ever I shalbe yt shalbe in your honor to dispose of me as of him that is unfainedly

Your honores duringe liffe/

FARD: GORGES.

From CHARLTON the 23th of Janeuarey.

Holograph. Add: To the Right honorabl S^r Robert Ceiffell knight Prinsepall Secretarey to hur Magestey and of hur Moste honarabl preve Counsell geve theyes. End. 23 Jan. 1601. S^r Far: Gorges to my M^r. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 92/164.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

I WOULD haue bin glad (Right honarabl) to have geven my atendancs upon your honor many times befor this but that I durst not presume so fare wthout knoulege of your good likinge in that be hallf but do ernestly desier yt if yt may stande wth your honores plesuer to afforde me that faffor, as well for that I am nowe lefte alone to be my ounde solifetor as allso that I longe to manefest in perti-color & at large, my thankfull nattuer, & trew & faithfull respete to your honor for the coumfortes & fafores I haue reseved from you & by your meanes wherfore I houlde myselffe bounde duringe life as he that is

Your honores most ashoured/

FARD: GORGES.

Aprell 28.

Holograph. Add: To the Right hon^r: S^r Robert Cecyll knight Princepall cecre-
tary to hur Mag^{te} and M^r of the wardes geve thes. End. Aprill 26 1602.
S^r Far: Gorge to my M^r. 1 p.

VOL. III.—15

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 105/62.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^R: heyer is dayly Expetasion of the arifall of a Careake taken by the holenderes in the Este Indes, laden wth Chynenn coumodetes as gould rawe fillke cloth of goulde mouske and souch like: if your lors: plles to thinke fite to delle wth them for any thinge they have, you may if it shall pllefe you, make youse of my nam and serfes, as of any Cretuer your H^r: have, that is most devoted unto you. nether shall you nede, to be farder senne theyer in then your sellfe pllefe: and loke what your plesuer is I desier maye be sent wth all convenient spedē that may be, and to the end I maye be the better able to perform what I wold I humbly beeche you to votesafe me the faffor to speke to my Lorde Tresorer that such mones as is dewe unto me maye be delyfered to thos I have geven order for the resayte theyer of so restinge humbly your lo: at coumaund duringe Liffe

from PLIMOUTH 21 of May 1604.

FARD: GORGES.

Addressed: To the Right hor my verey good lord The lo: Cecyll prinscp. Sec-
retaree to his Magesty Endorsed: 21 May 1604 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to
my Lord from Plymmuth. Holog. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 106/140.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^R: Leste I might feme to forgete my sellfe in neglettinge of thos my hon^r: frendes to whom by many benefites and saffores reseved, I stand bounde duringe my liffe.

liffe, I coulde no longer forbere humbly to remember my deutey to your h. and to recoummend to you by this berer Caþ Barley my leftenantte a pore and simpell token of my love and serfes the which I wishe were as riche as fayer humbly desiringe your h. to exfpte theyrof all though it be but a mite, it yt prosedeth from a fre harte and a mind desirues by all menes to apere himsellfe during his life

Your h. unfainedly to be coumanded /

FARD: GORGES.

from PLIMOUTH the 28 of Augoust 1604.

Add: To the Right hon^r : y^e Lo : Cecill Princepall Secretarey to his Mag^{ts} geve theyes. End : 28 August 1604 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lo. from Ply-mouth. Holog. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 110/160.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONO^{LL}: My humble dutie remembred: Here hath bene, and is still a reporte of certeine troopes of Spanyardes, that purpose to passe alonge the coaste for to goe into the Lowe Countries. If they shall touch in these partes, I doe humblie desire to knowe his Ma^{ts} pleasure what course we shall houlde, both for his highnes Ho^r:, and alfoe his securtie against any sinister practise: for your wisdome doth knowe it is not fitt to stand at the devotion of a freinde, when a Monarchie shalbe in question. Further it shall much satisfie the People of these partes, who doe nowe censure diverslie of these rumors, to heare, and see order taken for theire securties, who doe not sticke in a manner to say, that they are nowe left to the devotion of theire Enemies.

Wherfore,

Wherfore, if soe be, it may seeme necessarie in his Ma^{ts}: wisdome, I thinke it were not inconvenient that comāundement were given to the severall Captaynes to take notice of the defects of theire Companies, and to see them furnished out of hand, as alsoe some private caveat to those of the better forte to be reddie on all occasions to followe such direccōns, as shalbe geaven them from his Highnes, and your Lo:, a matter that will give to all much satisfaçcon. Another thinge I thought necessary to informe your Lo: of, is the daily outrages, and enormeties, that are comitted uppon the Coaste by Pyrates of our owne Nation under colour, and pretext of Comiſſion of those of the Lowe Countries, who doe by theire misdemeanour, and unhonest behav iour much scandalize our Nation, and impeache the trade of honest Marchaunts. The which courses I doubt nothing, but might easelie be prevented if Authoretie were given to any that knewe what to doe, and would be carefull of theire duties in that behalfe, and lycensed to exercise theire best meanes for the prevençon therof. And the remedie would prove the easier, if advtisement were given to those of the Lowe Countries not to permitt any Comiſſion to be geaven them of our Nation to attempt any thinge on this side of the Islandes of the Traceres,⁶⁰² and Canares. For beyonde those Isles it is not knowne that his Ma^{tie}: hath League or alliance, neither may his subiects trade with any of those people, but at theire hazard, and extreame adventure, and therfore those the leſſe to be excepted againſte for theire enterprices

⁶⁰² Terceira, one of the Azores. The "the Terceiras" from this, one of its group is often called by old writers principal islands.

terprices. Thus craving pardon for my bouldnes, and humbly referring the whole to your Lo: hono^{ll}: considera^{on}, and my selfe to be disposed of for ever by your Honor as

Your Lo: most humbly to be comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ts}: Forte by PLYMOUTH the 18th of May 1605.

Add: To the Right hono^{ll}: my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury Principall Secretarie to his Ma^{tie}: give these. End: 18 May 1605 S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. from PLYMMOUTH. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 111/29.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^{LL}: My humble dutie remembred This present daye here is arived a small Barke of this Towne, who makes reporte that he mett this morning off the harbour eight sayle, wherof there were five Lubickers, two Carvells, and one Dunkerker, laden with Spanyardes to goe for the Lowe Countries, wherby it seemeth that the Fleete expected is by this last storme, and fogge seperated. But howsoever your Lo: shall heare that his Ma^{ts}: servauntes in theise partes will diligently attende the meanes to make appeare theire honest cares and dutifull indeavour according to the direcc^{ons} lately receaved from theire Lo^{ps}: the which hath much setled and greatly contented the mindes of such, as before doubted what to doe in that behalfe, as shall more appeare to your Lo: as occasion shall require. It is further reported by the same man, that at Naples there were eight thowsand in a reddines to march over Lande. Soe at this present

present I humbly recomēnde your Lo: to the proteccon of
the Almighty remayning for ever

Your Lo: most humbly to be comāunded /

FARD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ts}: Forte by PLYMOUTH this 2th of June 1605.

Add: To the Right Hon^{ll}: my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury princē-
pall Secretary to his Ma^{tie}. End: 1605 June 2. S^r fardinando Gorges to my
Lord from Plymmouth. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 111/50.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^{LL}: This present daye here arived a fmall Car-
vill sent for Advise from Lisbourn, wherof was Capⁿ: one
Joseph de Mena, to inquire what was become of Pedre
Sebeues and his Fleete conteyninge eight sayle of shippes,
and two Carvells, wherin were 1200 souildiers, and many of
thoſe, men of note, and greate service, wherof the Admirall
was a shippe of London, the Viceadmirall a Scotifhman,
and the rest Easterlinges. He desired to have a Certificate
of his being here, and soe in the space of two houres he
departed againe to goe to Dartmouth, and soe to followe his
direccons, being not hable to make any report of my Lo:
Admirall, or any of his Company nor any other newes, but
of nyne sayle of great shippes departed for the East Indies,
and the death of Don John de Aguila, of all which I
thought fitt to give advertisement to your Lo: and herby
humbly to remember my dutie as one that will ever reſte

Your Lo: most humbly to be comāunded /

FARD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ts} Forte by PLYMOUTH the 10th of June 1605.

Add: To the Right Hon^{ll}: my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury. End:
10 June 1605. Sir fardinando Gorges to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 109/124.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^{LL} My humble dutie remembred. Here arived this weeke a man of warre of Holland sett out by certeine Marchaunts of Amsterdām, whose Cap^{ns} name was Jope, and having lyen in the sownde some two dayes he understoode of a Dunkerker that rode in Cattwater, and being persuaded by certeine of his Company that she was riche, they first made him drunken and then in that humor drewe him to give an attempt uppon hir, and soe the 15th of this monethe at two of the clocke in the morning he past himselfe by our guardes in two boats full of men, who were kept soe close, as not above foure could be discovered to be in each boate, and being called unto by the sentinell aunswered they were of How, and that they came out of the sea from fishing. But as soone as they had rowen up the harbour as highe as the shippe laye, they presently bourded hir without any manner of resistaunce or noise making, and finding it not safe to carrie awaye the shippe, they seised on the M^r, and rifled certeine co^modities (but of noe great value) and soe retourned againe making replie to the sentinell that called to them, that they came from How. But word being brought unto me by bargemen that were at that tyme to unlade corne out of a flemishe shippe therby, what had hapned. I used my best witt, and meanes how to recover the poore men theire goodes, and libertie againe, and the better to bringe it to passe I employed M^r Mathew of this Towne, whose credit I knewe to be most powerfull amonge the people of those provinces, who soe far forth prevailed

by

by entreaties, and threats, as in the end they sett at libertie the prisoner, and restored what could be recovered from that unruly Company, althoughe they were at this tyme two leages in the sea under saile. But nowe the winde is come to the Southwardes, and they forced into Cawson Bay, soe as I doubt nothing but to be able by God's grace to take soe good a course therin for the satisfacon of all parts, as neyther his Ma^{tie} nor theire Lordshipps shall neede to take any further notice of it. But thus much notwithstanding I thought fitt to advertise to prevent any misse reporte, or false suggestion that might be made, as alsoe that the truth might at first appeare, to the end your Lo: may the better conceave of what shalbe delivered to the contrary. Thus befeeching God to bleffe, and prosper your Lordshippe, remayning for ever

Your Lo^{ps} in all humilitie to be comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

from his Ma^{ts}: Forte by PLYMOUTH the 16th of Jann: 1605.

Add: To the Right hon^{ll}: my verie good Lord the Earle of Salisbury. End: 16 Jane 1605. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 190/46.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONO^{ll}: My humble dutie remembred. Your L^{ps} favourable acceptaçon of my last hath imboldened me at this present to recomand unto your grave and hon^{ll}: consideraçon, these inclosed notes; of what consequence they are, your wisedome will eftsoone perceave. And, it is, questionless (to reforme abuses, and errors of the Lawe, crept in by tyme,

tyme, and occasyon,) noe lesse necessarie, then the enacting of newe. But if my dutifull indevoure, and honest intent in this shalbe acceptable, I will herafter (God giving me leave) perticularly sett downe, either by writing, or otherwise, as I shalbe comaunded, the meanes, howe by ex-perience I finde it is most necessarie the Lawe in that case ought to be executed for avoiding all partialitie, and private respect, from whence shall arise the publicke utilitie to the comon wealth, and generall content of all, as alsoe his Ma^{ts}: service the more effectuallie, and easelie per-formed: besides your L^p: if you voutchsafe to accept therof, shall reape the meanes to pleasure some your par-ticular freindes, his highnes seruaunts, and receave an ac-knowledgm^t for your favourable kindnes: In this, if your L^p: shall marveile why I doe not rather addresse my adver-tisement to such noble persons of his Ma^{ts}: Councell that have professed the exercise, and use of armes, then to your L^p: Lett it suffice (I beseech you) that I conceave I knowe none more fitt in respect of your place, and neerenes to his Ma^{tie}: then your self: and alsoe I finde that I am bownde (for manie favours done to me by your L^p:) to studie by all waies, and meanes, to approve my selfe a thaunkfull receauer of them, and continuallie will earnestlie praie to the eter-nall God to blesse and prosper you, to whome I will con-tinewe my selfe most faythfullie

Your L^{ps}: humblie to be Comaunded / FARD: GORGES.

From his Mats Forte by PLYMOUTH the 24 of February, 1605.

Add: To the Right hon^{ll}: my verie good Lord the Earle of Salisbury at the Courte give theise. End: 24 Februar. 1605. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 116/39.)

DEPUTY MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH TO THE EARL OF
SALISBURY.

RIGHTE HONO^{BLE}: our humble dutyes remembred. It hath pleased o^r very good Lorde, the Lo: Cheife Justice of Englande out of an Honorable disposi^con to recomend unto us an enterprice for establishm^te of a Planta^con in the parts of America; whereunto we weare drawen to assent (uppon hope to obtayne suche free and reasonable Condi^cons as had in former tymes ben graunted, by her late Ma^{tye} of famous memorye, to certeine particular Gent: But sithence, it appeares, that it hath ben thoughte more Convenyent (for respects beste knowne to yo^r Lo^{pp}:) to assigne us to be dyrected (under his Ma^{tye}:) by a Councell of dyvers, some very worthie and wo^{rple}: persons, othe^{rs}, of the same rancke and quallytie o^rselves are, the greatest parte, strangers to us & o^r proceedings, w^{ch} neverthelesse, being donne wth yo^r Lo: prevetye, we doubte not of anie inconvenyence or discomoditye w^{ch} maie growe thereby; and therefore doe whollye referre o^rselves to yo^r Hono^{ble}: Care over us. And for o^r further desires to yo^r Lo^{pp}: we leauue to be more largely related by Cap^m Love the bearer hereof whome we haue purposely sent upp to that ende, and (amongeste the reste, to become an humble sutor, to yo^r Lo^{pp}. that it woulde please you to Vouchsafe us yo^r favorable protection and helpe, as one in whome, we in this behalf, as in all other things (nexte unto his Ma^{tye}) doe desire to make o^r cheefe dependencye, and to be assisted by yo^r self wth suche other Hono^{ble}: & worthie persons as in your wisdome shalbe thought

thought fitt, amongeste whome we Cannot but remember the Lord Cheefe Justice wth or humble thanks for his good affection towards us in this behalf. And for that we have had many testimonyes & apparances of yo^r Lo^rpps love & favo^r towards us herein, we are bold at this present to beseeche the Contynewance thereof, and haue promised wth orselves not to proceede further wthout yt, whollye relyinge upon yo^r favo^r & wisdome, to be disposed of, both in bodye and goods, so farre forthe, as you shalbe pleased to Comaund. And in the meane tyme we will contynewallye praie for all Hono^r and happines to you and yo^{rs}, humblye cravinge pardon for our overboldnes in beinge thus trowblesome to yo^r good Lo^rpp^e: to whome we doe reste in all dutiefull service.

Yo^r Lo^r: moste humblie to Comaund/

WALTERE MATHEWE,⁶⁰³
deputie maior and his bretherin.

From PLYMOUTH this 10th of Maye 1606.

Holograph. Add: To the Right honorable my verie good Lord the Earle of Salisbury. End: 10 May 1606. Maio^r of Plymmouth to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 116/40.)

' SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONORABLE: My humble dutie remembred: Thorough the mocon att firste of some particular persons, and

⁶⁰⁸ Walter Mathews succeeded Sir Richard Hawkins in the office of Mayor in 1604. He had been the servant of Hawkins, and his wife had also been the servant of Lady Hawkins. At a banquet Lady Hawkins refused to sit at the table

and weel afected of these partes in this Idle tyme to bring to passe somethinge worthie his Ma^{ts} gratiouſe acceptaſce. It hath pleased my Lo: Cheife Justice⁶⁰⁴ out of an ho: diſpoſition to aduaunce theire proceedings and (as yt ſeemes) to be a meanes for the obteyninge of his highnes free leave and good liking as by his letters Pattents yt doth att lardg appere to fevall parties graunted. But ſome things there are whereunto they finde them ſeavles tied wth hath exceedinglie cooled the heate of theire afeccons that att firſte did make profer of theire adventures. As namelie they are upon all occaſons to expeſte theire direccons. for theire govern^t from certeyne whome his ma^{tie} hath eleccon to be of his Councell for thoſe afaires in and about the Cittie, and although many of them exceeding worthie, yet diuers Cittizens both of London, Bristow, and Exon well knownen to have noe manner of underſtanding what belongeth thereunto more then ordinarie. Befides for them heere to be tyed upon all occaſons to Poſte yt to London, is a matter ſoe tedeouſ and chargeable as they are wholie diſtaſted wth the ymaginac̄ion thereof, and as I perceave they have written to his Lo: they utterlie refuse to proceede any farther, unles they may be ſoe happie, as to obteyne yo^r Lo: ho: favo^r to joyne wth his Lo: for the delivering of them from ſoe heavie a yoake as they ymagine this in tyme wilbe unto them. And in deed when yt was once bruted that ſoe many

table below the Mayoreſſ, and a ſcuffle between them ensued, which was ended by Lady Hawkins giving the Mayoreſſ a box on the ear. This created a ſcandal; and as his wife was clearly in the

wrong, Sir Richard made the town amends by giving it a house on Market Street. *Vide The History of Plymouth*, by R. N. Worth, Plymouth, 1873, p. 133.
⁶⁰⁴ Sir John Popham.

many Cittizens and Tradesmen weare made councello^{rs} to his highnes for the disposing of theire afaires that on theire private chardg undertooke the enterprize, all the gentlemen that before weare willing to be lardge adventurers presentlie wthdrew themseavles and by noe meanes will have to doe therein. But now the pore Townesmen of Plymouth relyeing themseavles upon yo^r lo[:] ho[:] favor doe humblie ymploare your protection hoping by yo^r: ho[:] meanes to finde releefe or otherwise they doe dispayer of any future good hereof to ensew unto them. And undoubtedlie (yf my judgm^t doe not much deceave me) yt wilbe a matter of that momente and consequence both unto his ma^{tie} and our whole nation as yt weare greate pittie yt should be suffered to fall to the grounde. Neyther can theare be any thinge more ho[:] then free Condi^{cons} to be graunted to such as willinglie doe hazard themseavles and theire estats wthout farther chardg to his highnes, to sease him of soe lardge Territories as they promyse to doe. And for ought I perceave theire desier (more then is graunted alreadie) is principally that they may be assignd to your Lo[:] and my Lorde Cheife Justice wth such other ho[:] and worthie persons as you shall thinke fitt to take unto you for your more easie execusion of his highnes pleafuer as occa^{con} from tyme to tyme shall require, and that there may be certeyne Comyffiones authorized and by you chosen out of these partes that may att all tymes be presente redelie to receave and execute those directions to the ease of all heere wthout theire farther troble or chardge, and that they may be exempted from having to doo wth those Citizens and townesmen nomynated in his Ma^{ts} graunte, whome they see
are

are like heereafter to prevayle agaynste them in that they have alreadie gotten the govern^t over them, soe as they can looke for noe manner of libertie more then shall stand wth theire likinge, or sorte to the profitt of theire severall Corpora^cons, and therefore they are become humble futers to yo^r good Lo: for obteyninge theire release in that behaule. And that being graunted yt is doubtles that many worthie and brave spirates will easilie be drawen to Ingage themseulves in this Designe, and the rather yf they finde they may walke under the shelter and by the direction of soe ho: a person as yo^r sealf, w^{ch} I proteste I speake not to flatter, as I doubt not but the sequell will manyfetlie men^con, and weare my meanes answerable I would say more then now I can, but as yt is I will for ever acknowledg yt your Lo: and my sealf to be disposed of during liefe as,

Your Lo: in all services most humblie to be comaundered /

FARD: GORGES.

From the forte bie PLIMOTH the 10th of Maie 1606.

Add: To the righte Ho: my verie good Lo: the Earle of Salisburie. End:
10 May 1606. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 115/88.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HO^{BLE} My humble dutie remembred, our great expecta^con for the discoverie of our newe fownd Countrey hath unhappelie bin Crost by our good frinds the spaniards
whoe

whoe thinking much that wee should inheir the libertie of Land or Seas, hath feased uppon our shipp and men (as by the relation here inclosed yt may more att leardg appeere) w^{ch} by storme and tempest weere put in to Burdeox in Fraunce in one of the spanishe ships, against whome wee must humbly intreate yo^r lo^{ipps} favoure to farther our proceedings for recoverie of satisfaction not onelie for our shipp & goods, but our henderances and damages, that they may knowe wee are not so flavishe that wee will indure theire insolences, nor so base that wee will not seeke a juste revenge, yf they right us not according to reason & equetie.

I referr yt to your wisdome to conceive to what height there pride and insolencie will growe when this peace (reported to be in handling betweene them and the holanders) they shall find themselves to be (as yt weare) m^r of the Seas, or is yt to be beleved that when they shall find all power to be in their owne hands they will be then more juste and fvororable unto us, then now they are, when they doe knowe yt is in our owne stringhts to right our selves whensoever his ma^{tie} will vouchsafe but to give leve to the parties greved to seeke yt, herein my thinkes I could speake something to yo^r lo^{ipp} conserning their intended peace wth the holanders / but I dare not bee too troblesome onelie I have some reason to perswad me, that yt is more probable the Rumoure is trewe, then that yt should not be soe, and my reasons are prencipally these, first the considera \bar{c} ons of their estates not able longer to continewe the warres seeing themselves as yt weere forsaken of all / seondlie finding their spiretts to be vanquished by their enemies, in asmuch as he hath dejected the courage of their Armie being compounded of mercinaries,

ries, and theirfor hoples of more then their monthlie payes, yt being not in their meaines to renewe their minds in giving of honor or rewards (the spures of vertues and the life of greate interprices) And lastlie finding in their own harts themselves att the hiest picthe of their hopes for these for-said causes and consideraçons will (I fear me) too sodenlie inforce them to laye hould upon the present oportunitie, while they find they may obtaine what Condiçons they can resonably demaund, w^{ch} yf they be permitted to persever therein, how easilie is yt to be proved that our miseryes are not farr of, seeing our selves dismembred of soe notable a lymme, but in this I dare not wade farther before I may receive pardon for my presumption for entermedling in busines soe farr above my capasitie, although as yo^r lo^{pp} doeth knowe I have had some experience of the afaires of tymes past, but what I have else to saye in this behalfe I will be redy (when yo^r lo^{pp} shall comaund) to give my attendance bothe to satisfie what may be objected, and to shewe my reasons for any thing I shall prepound, in the meane while craving pardon for this, I humbly comend yo^r lo^{pp} to the protexion of the almighty, continewing in all servis

Yo^r lo^{ps} humbly to be comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

februarie 4th 1606.

Add: To the Right ho^{:ble} my very good lord the Earle of Salfbury give this:

End: 4 Feb. 1606 Sir Fer. Gorge to my Lord. 2 pp.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 115/89.)

ENCLOSURE IN LETTER OF GORGES TO CECIL OF FEB. 4, 1606-7.

THE Relasior of Daniell Tucker merchant beinge implyed by divers Advententerars of Plimmothe to goe as Factor of a shipe bownd for Floredae wrytten by him selfe the 4th of February ā 1606.

The wind beinge faer we departed from Plimmothe the 12th of Auguste, w^{ch} winde contened tell we came wthin 80 Leages of the westward Ilandes, and then the wind westerd wth a grete storme, where by we waer put for the Iland of Maderes,⁶⁰⁵ where we wattered wth the Governors Licence one the 4th of Septtember and there staed tell the 8th daye /

And from thens we stude owr Corse for the coste of Floredae, but after we had saled some 100 Leges we waer be calmed 14 daes together, and by Reson of the exstrem hete owr freshe water scanted uppon us so as we waer forsed to the outer moste Ilandes of the weste Ingess.

And about the Lafe of october we a Rived at a niland called Margellanta,⁶⁰⁶ wher we wattered and Refreshed owr selves wth suche Frutes as the Iland did afford, and staed ther 4 daes, from thens we wente by a Niland called Domeneca, wher a Spanishe Frier came a bord owr shipe, in a small Canoe wth 5 Ingens w^{ch} brought Frutes wth them. The saed Frier desired us for Godes Caes to geve him pas-
sage for some parte of Cristendom, whos shipe had bene

Caste

⁶⁰⁵ The island of Madeira.

a short distance from, Santo Domingo.

⁶⁰⁶ The island of Mariegalante, in the Caribbean Sea, northward of, and but

It is in the posseffion of France.

Caste a waye some 13 monthes befoer and all his Company drownned and slaned by the Engians,⁶⁰⁷ only hee saved a Live.

Whiche faed Frier we tooke into owr shipe, and some 4 daes after we sete him a shoer at the Estward of Portarecca,⁶⁰⁸ and ther delevered him unto two Spanniardes wth waer herdes men of Cattell, wher we staed two daes, and goinge from thens owr shipe Came a grownd, but wth out anye harme we got Cleer, and so stude owr Corse to Floredae.

And beinge at see in the hithe of 26 degres & some 60 Leges from the shoer we mete wth a Flete of a 11 shipes (all Spanniardes) merchant men, on the 10th of November in the morninge we waer in the middeste of the faed Flete, we standinge owr Corse, one of the windward shipes shot at us, wher uppone we wente to the Admerall, and Comminge under his Lee, the Admerall shot at us two shot, and came a borde of owr shipe in most veyholent manner, and disposeste us of owr shipe and goodes, and sent us a bowrde of his one shipe, and the nexte day parted us some 4 & 5 in a shipe and put Spanniardes a borde of owr shipe and stud for Sevell in Spane But by Resen the Admerall had a grete Lecke the Reste of the shipes Lefte him onlye wth owr shipe and soe parted from the Admerall, and 6 daes after we Losle all owr Flete in a grete storme wth moer winde then we Cowlde well stere afoer, and by Resen of exstreme fowle wether and havinge a bad Pilote who Cowld not tacke his Juste hithe we Continued at see two monthes in grete meserie

⁶⁰⁷ Indians.

⁶⁰⁸ Porto Rico; one of the Antilles,

east of Hayti and west of the Virgin

Islands.

erie & exstremetie, and soe not knowinge where we waer, we arived at the Rever of Burde⁶⁰⁹ the seconde of Januarey /

And the M^r and the Reste of the Spanniardes knoinge theme selves to bee in Burde, thaye Commanded my selfe wth the three other of my Companye, to bee put into the shipes howld and there thaye kepte us Five daes and Five nites, in that manner, tell the Juge of the Admerralte Came a borde of the shipe Riddinge aganste the Towne of Burdex and Exfammened my selfe, And the Juge understandinge the truthe of owr Caues Carried me and the three other a shoer to Burdex.

And when I was at Lebertie I wente to one of the Cheffeste Counseller and sertefied him of owr veyage & howe the Spanniardes had used us and in what manner thay had tacken us. I desired his Cownfell what Course was beste to tacke a ganste the Spanniardes, who advised me to fee a Procter, and macke a petesyon to the Parlemente and to the Admerall to have the M^r of the Spanishe shipe & the rest of my Company exfammened, w^{ch} I did, and shoed the Copie of all owr exfammensions to my Cownseller, who advised me to macke a Letter of a Turnie to my Procter and to some other whome I thought good, and thaye to folloe the Caues a ganste the Spanniardes in my Absence, and my selfe to Repaer for England wth all sped, and to Returne wth serteficate to Conferme owr exfammension to bee truthe.

Where uppone I made a Letter of a Turnye to my Procter and to a nother my solester w^{ch} hathe order to areste the saed Spanishe shipe and goodes, tell furder profe Commethe out of England.

This

⁶⁰⁹ The river of Bordeaux; i. e. the Garonne.

This beinge Finneshed I departed from Burdx and at my departtuer my Cownseller and my Procter saed ther was no dowt but the worthe of the shipe and gudes wth all damages wold bee Recovered of them /

By me /

DANIELL TUCKER.

Endorsed: 4 Feb 1606/1607 The Relation of Daniell Tucker going to terra Florida. 3 $\frac{1}{4}$ pp.

CONCERNING THE SHIP TAKEN AT SEA GOING TO VIRGINIA.

(Cecil Papers 119/149.)

IT seemeth by the journal of the Treaty, that the adventurers into any partes of the Indias, should be lefft unto the perell w^{ch} they should incurr thereby. Hereupon groweth this question, what is to be done with the Marryners that are taken in Spaine, (being 18 or 20 in number) as they were goeing from the West partes of England to a discovery into Virginia; and what course is to be taken with the Spanish ship dryven into Bourdeaux, w^{ch} ship was a principall actor in taking the English ship. First it must be considered, that although it is disputeable, whether Virginia be part of the Indias though it be situate upon the same continent of the West Indies; yet for avoiding of the occasion thereby to fall into the gⁿall ⁶¹⁰ question of the Indias and our trading therewith, it might be advised that it were better to leave these prisonners to their fortune, then by bringing it in question to stirr up some greater inconveniences that might ensue of it.

Secondly,

⁶¹⁰ General.

Secondly, yf it be alleadged that they went but to a place formerly discovered by us, and never possessed by Spaine, it may be answered that this allegation altereth not the state of the question but only the forme, whether wee may trade into any partes of the Indias that are not possessed by Spaine w^{ch} point was then at the handling of the Treaty directly denied by the Spanish Commissioners. All w^{ch} considered, it may be more aptly stood upon, that these prisonners having not yet offended (unless it be an offense, to be in those feas (w^{ch} by the law of nations ought to be free quoad navigationem) but were only goeing, towards a place, w^{ch} is yet disputable whether it be allowable or not by the Treaty, that in regard thereof, howsoever it may not seeme unjust to have stayd them and diverted them from their journey; yet it seemes to be unjust so rigourously to punish them for it, as to committ their bodys to prison, and to take away their goodes. And therefore it may be concluded (under humble correction) that his Ma^{ty} may write in their favour, upon the termes aforesaid, to the king of Spaine, or to his Ambassad^r there: and may geve order to his Ambassad^r in France, to insit to demand Justice against the Spanish ship at Bourdeaux that tooke and robbed our men at sea, as Pyrats doe. 2 pp.

End: 1606 Concerning the ship taken at sea goeing to Virginia. In the hand of
Levinus Munck, one of Cecil's Secretaries.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 120/53.)

NEVILL DAVIS TO THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.

RIGHT HONNORABLE my humble duetie Remembred, may
 yt please yo^r ho^r: that at pñt occasion beinge offereid
 whereby I am imboldned to send these fewe lines unto yo^r
 lopp: Thereby to signifie the misserye of dyvers poore men
 here pryssoners, that were taken in a small shipp of Plymouth
 called the Richard where of was Captaine one Henry Chal-
 lines; and as yt appereth were set forth by S^r Fardenando
 Joorge, and dyvers other gent: and they Report yo^r: ho^r: to
 be one of the Cheiffest adventurars in this there pretended
 voyage, beinge for a newe discovery in the norweast pts,
 under the Lattetude of 41 and 42 degrees. They were
 surpryfed by seven marchant shippes, w^c did come from S^{ta}
 Domingo; mettinge them some 150 leages to the norward
 of porto rico, in the height of 27 degrees o^r thereabouts,
 here are 18 of them and 2 salvages of the country they
 went unto; The Captaine and one m^r Thomas S^t Jn^o we
 haue released under fuerties. The relasion of there pro-
 sedings, from the time thẽ departed from Plymouth, I refer
 to there wryttings, and report of some that have escaped, all
 there exfamynacions are taken and sent to the court y^e last
 weeke; by there confessions yt appereth they have comytted
 noe offence against anie of this kings subiects, only to doe
 good to a spanishe fryer, and preservynge his life was cause
 thẽ fell into these trobles, I will doe my indevor to assyft
 them in what I may, beinge sorry there pretence should so
 unfortunaytly be overthrowne, and discovered I have ad-
 vertysfed

vertysed my lord embassador hereof, who I hope will seeke remedye for there inlargm^t:

The Spaniards here seme nothinge pleased wth this attempt, and I doe thincke they will indevor to prevent us from goeing into those parts, if by anie meaines th̄ can, wherefore in the attemptinge yt againe, those w^{ch} are to māindge⁶¹¹ the same, must deall very surcumspectlie for beinge enterseptted, I hope that god will oppen those Remoot and unknownen places unto us whereby in tyme o^r country may fynde a more saffer and proffetabler trade then we have donne here since the peace; for I doe asure yo^r Lopp: what thorough the soundry molestacions by dyvers offyco^{rs} here and the exseffyve imposyssions w^c we pay inward and outward uppon o^r goods, we are, and shalbe consumed by this trade, as I referr me to y^e gennerall report of those w^c doe adventer hether, and fell the losse, and I am sure yf a true Calcolation were taken yt would be found his Ma^{ts}: subiects haue lost near Eyleghtie thousand pounds by the trad of Spaine: All o^r woollen comodyties for the most part are in noe estimaçon here, as before the warrs and daylie wilbe lese and lese, by reason of the great store of cloth made here, and for this hoot country, farr better then o^{rs}, wherefore yt is requyfit we seeke other places for the venting of o^r cloth, Thus refferinge my self to the good confytheraçon of yo^r ho^r: and craving pardon for my boldnes I rest contynewally prayinge for yo^r Lopp^s: happie estayt etc /

Yo^{rs} honno^{rs} in all dutie:/

NEVILL DAVIS.

fr: Sivel this 4th of february, 1607: stillo nova. Holograph. [No address.] End: 1607 Nevil Davis to my lo: cheef Justice concerning the men that went to Virginea. 1 p.

⁶¹¹ Manage.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 115/112.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HON^R: in my lafte to your L: I advertised my opinion of the danger that might infew in cace the peace (then spoken of) betwen the arche Ducke and the Holondores tooke efeckte, senc w^{ch} I heyr soe mouch out of france, as yt semeth, theyr is greaterre cause to beleve yt is moste necessary, yt his Mag^{ty} wolde be plesed to take care of the perell that maye from thenc in fewe, for your L. shall finde (if yt shall plese you to examen the p'ticols of the fr: K: his profeding is), that yt cannot be, but he hath soumthinge in hand extreordenary and hapely resoullvinge, now his coffores ar full, his stores in all plases furneished, his state settled, his peopell riche, his kingdum repleneished wth many exselente Cap: above all knowinge him sellfe second to non, for his valluer Jugment and understandinge of the wares, that he duth but atend or secke a opportunity and it is posible you will finde, that rather then fayell, he wilbe rede to admenester the occasion himsellfe, yether by wordes, or dedes, or both, of y^e fereſt (if it be trew y^t is reported) he is no nigarde, and for the second, he hath latly hade the Governores of his principall portes wth him, unto whom, he hath geven instruxfiones, to procede in the carege of theyr afares accordinge to his plesuer in that behallf, what corſe he hath roune wth thos of the Low contreyes is best knownen to your L. but I thought it fyte in discharge of my duttey, to adverſis to your hon^r: my opinion in this behallfe. To the end his Mag^{te}. myght be pleased to examine the estate of his forſes,

forfes, and to have in considerasian, that he hath, to in-
counter wth a frenche K: sodden by nattur, (by his longe
experenc) of great jugment, (and if he be not changed from
what he was) ambisiuſly inclined to inlarge his dominiones:
and, in his proſedinges, he hath advantage of any Prince
Cristen, for he nedes not to conſulte wth his Cap, how, or
what he ought to doo, but like a Cefor, canne order all him
ſellfe, by w^{ch} meanes he is aſhoured his reſoluſiones wilbe
kepte ſecrete (a matter of admarall conſequenc) in deſines
of this natuer.

as for the peace (the bond (as yt maye be thought) of our
ſecuretey) yt hath never bin ſene that thos frenche kings
have longer hilde wth our naſion, then untell they hadde
gayneſ the advantage ſought for, and prinſes haue never
bine to ſecke how to aprobve theyr Caufe juſte or lafull when
they Listed to make the ware, and the only menes to Con-
tinew a peſſe invialable, is, all wayes to be ſuffiſently pro-
vided, both to defend, and to offend, in w^{ch} caſe, non will
dare to atempte, for feere of procuringe theyr ound Lofſe.

but how yt ſtandeth wth his Mag^{te} in this caſſe, is beſte
knownen to your L. and all that ar honeſte and haue caufe
to loke into yt, may wth greffe and forow lament yt, but not
to dealle wth mor then what beſtones to my particolor, and
in diſcharge of my dutey I thought yt fyſt heyrby, to geue
advertisment to your h. of the eſtate of this plafe, that theyr
by, I may be blamles what ſoum ever heyr after maye inſew,
thorow defecte or wante of thinges neſeſarey: And ferſte,
for the plafe y^t ſellfe, your L: duth know yt was never fin-
eſhed, beſides mouche of what was doun, tim hath decaied,
nether was yt ever ſafeſtly forniſhed wth ordenaſce, or
ought

ought ellse, as for monision, at my lafte couminge, the pre-
porcion was verey Littell that I reseved, and since, occasiones
hath bin, ether for triumpes, or ordenarey coustumes of
entertainmentes, that the greateste of that Littell is spente,
nor is theyr any to be hade in theyes partes, what occasion
soum ever should hapen, the ordenary garde, your wifdum
duth know, ar (in efecte) nothinge, spesually if the wares
breake out betwen us and france, whos forses, we shall sonner
see, then heyr of, and as for y^e toun, I ashour your L: they
ar growne mouch weaker then they wer in times paste, for
that the marenores, and sefaringe men, that then did fre-
quent yt, ar now gon the moste of them ellse wher, in like
manor, the contrey, ar out of usse, and theyr armes out of
order, theyr mindes unwillinge, and theyr boddes unapte, if
this desease be universiall (as yt is to be feared) what cann be
hoped for, if the spedur course be not tacken for suply and
reformasian.

The Kingdom of Ingland is suche a baite to drawe on the
inclinasion of an ambisius prince (knowinge our defectes
and his ound power) as no tim is to be detracted, how by all
meanes posse, to secure and make frustrate any suche
intente. The sonner yt is accompled, the lesse wilbe y^e
daingor and yt is a besnes of that consequenc, that yt will
indeur no delaye, humbly craving pardon if heyr in I sem
mor jelues then theyr is cause. bechinge your L to re-
member, that yt cann be no dommege in tim to prevent a
mischehefse, nor no hurte, in beinge able to in counter wth y^e
worste, yt is not feare of my sellfe, or of my life, that duth
urge me heyr unto, for deth is no strainger unto my nattur,
that duth know better how to dye then to leve, yt soum

care

care I have I confes not to be condemned when I am dede, for havinge ben improvident, not to secke for thinges nese-
farey in cases of this consequenc, but how foun ever, I hum-
bly recoumende the confederasion of the holle unto your L.
grave and ho^r: wissdum, desiringe in all dutey to be remem-
bred in this my advertesment, and in all serves to aprove
my sellfe dурinge Life

Your L. moste humbly to be coumanded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLIMOUTH this 19 of february 1606.

Add: To the Right hon^r: my verey good L. y^e Erell of Sallsberey geve theyes

End: 19 february 1606. Sir ferdinando Gorges to my lord. Holog: 3 pp.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. I. 1574-1621.)

SIR F. GORGES TO CAPT. H. CHALLONS.

M^r CHALINGE I receiued your tres sent me by the M^r Nicholas Hines by whom I rest satisfied for your pte of the proceedinge of the voyadge and I doubte not but you wilbe able to aunswere the expe^ctaⁿon of all your freinds. I hoope you shall receiue verie shortlie if alreadie you haue not an Attestation out of the highe Courte of Admiraltie to giue satisfaccon of the truthe of our intent y^t sett you out let me advise you to take heede that you be not ou^rshott in acceptinge recompence for our wronges receivd for you knowe that the io^rney hath bene noe smale Chardge unto us y^t first sent to the Coast and had for our returne but the fие salvadges whereof two of the principall you had with you and since wthin two monthes after your depture we sent out another shippe to come to your supplie and now againe we

we haue made a nue preparaçon of diuers others all w^{ch} throughe your misfortune is likelie to be frustrate and our time and Chardge lost, therefore you^r demands must be Aunswerable hereunto and accordinglie seeke for satisfaccon which cannot be lesse then fие thousande poundes and therefore before you conclude for losse attende to receive for resolucon from hence if they Aunswere you not thereafter for if their condicōns be not such as shalbe reaſonable we doe knowe how to right our felues for rather then we wilbe loofers a penny by them we will attende a fitter time to gett us our Content and in the meane time leave all in their handes therefore be you carefull herein and remember y^t it is not the buisines of Merchants or rovers, but as you knowe of men of another ranke and such as will not p'ferre manie Complayntes nor exhibite diuers petitions, for that they understande a shorter way to the woode, soe Comendinge you to god and Contiñuinge My selfe

Your most assured and lovinge Freinde /

FERDINANDO GORGES.

PLIMOTHE 13th of Marche 1606.

postscript. I pray you use the meanes that the saluadges and the Companie be ſent over wth as muche ſpeede as is poſſible and y^t you haſten you^r ſelfe away, if you ſee not likelihoode of a preſent ende to be had for we will not be tired wth their delaies and endleſſe ſutes ſuche as comonlie they uſe but leauē all to time and god the iuft revenger of wronges.

FERDINANDO GORGES.

End: 1606. The Coopie of S^r Ferdinand Gorges, his Ire to M^r Chalens.
Receiued y^e 6 day.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 120/153.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

RIGHT HON^{BLE}: my humble dutie remembred:
Considering that the reas ons w^{ch} commonly are most pre-
vailant betweene princes & states, in conclusion of peace (if
the victorie be not accomplished) are the necessities of eyther
part not longar able to pursue the warres, and no sooner are
the conditions concluded on, but the last day of the con-
firmation therof is the first begininge to make preparation to
supplie those defects, and to hasten the meanes to encounter
wth all occurrants that time, occasion, or mens natures shall
present; for these reas ons, together with the knowledg I have
that ther is in yo^r Llo: the same wifdome, providence, &
foresight, upon understanding, and examination had therof, I
have thought it fitt in discharge of my dutie to give adver-
tizment of the state of this place the w^{ch} his Highness hath
been pleased to commend to my charge, unto the end that
amongst other your graue considerations it may please you
to take knowledg therof and therin to determin what your
wifdoms shall think fitt:

First therfore it may please your Lls: to understande
that the fortification it self was never fullie finished, as it is
not unknowne to some of yo^r Lls: and for want of repar-
ation, much of what was doone is falln into ruine and decay,
besides it was never sufficiently furnished with eyther ordi-
nance, munition or ought els necessary or fitt, being of that
nature and consequens yt it is, for as much as it is the only
randevous his Ma^{tie} hath on all occasion to the Southward
and the magazon for all the western parts, giveing both life,
and

and courage to the Inhabitants, if it be used therafter. And as for powder it was a smale proportion that I receaved at my last cominge, the which is now in a manner wholly spent, what in triumphs for his Ma^{tie}, and usuall entertainment of strangers that pafs in and out of the harbo^r; neyther is ther any in these parts to be gotten upon what occasion soever.

Secondly how smale numbers are assignd to doe duty both in the Iland, and the fort, I farther referr to yo^r wisdoms to be considered of, the w^{ch} I do the rather give in remembrance to yo^r Lls: because I dayly finde how much the serviceable people of this towne, and parts adjoyninge are decaied, and gone into other places, wherby we cannot so sodainly be assisted as in tymes past we might have beene. Neither do I finde the country in that readines as formerly they wer accustomed to be through the use and daily exercise they had of their armes, and the continuall expectation that every man lived in. But those occasions of alarums being ceased, their minds are now diverted, and wholly turned to self love of privat commoditie, and a sensless security of perpetuall peace, so as there can be nothing looked for from the multitude, without your grave and Hon^{ble}: wisdoms prevent it, but an absolute, and generall neglect of publique safetie, laying open therby that greate breach of advantage that a malicious, or ambitious enemy may expect or hope for.

These things Right Hon^{ble} I doubt not, being of that consequens that they are, but that it will please yo^r Ho: out of your graue wisdoms to give prefent order for supply of things necessary therby to prevent the inconveniencese that for defalt therof may ensue, and for the better dischARGE of
my

my dutie heerin I have apointed my Lieftenant Captaine Barlee to give his attendance for yo^r Lls: resolutions, forbearing to trouble yo^r wisdoms with the multitude of reasons, that may be given for the haſtning therof, only this conclusinge under yo^r Lls: favours, that, for myne own part, I could never finde ther was daunger in beinge armed to meet whith all encounters, nor ar warrs commonly attempted, wher ther is knowledg taken of provisions in a readinesſ and meanes, or power to refiſt, but on the contrarie, the negligent, and unarmed are allwaies a pray to the vigilant, and powerfull. Even ſo commanding yo^r Llo: to gods holy protection, and the whole to yo^r grave and ho^{ble}: conſideraſtions, I humbly take my Leave. Written from his Ma:^{ties} Fort by Plymouth this 7th of Aprill 1607.

Your Lls: moſt humble at Commaunde /

FARD: GORGES.

Add: To the Right Hon^{ble} the Lords of his Ma^{ties} moſt Honorable privie Counſell theſe. End: 7 Aprill 1607. Sir Ferdinando Gorge to the Ll. of the Counſeil. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 121/65.)

CAPTAIN GEORGE POPHAM TO THE EARL OF SALISBURY.

REMEMBRINGE my ſelf in all humble dutifulnes unto my righte honorable good lord, doe by theis make bolde to advertize, that I directed my late ſtres unto yo^r L^{pp} conſerninge a commaunde I had from my Lo: Cheife Justice of England, to appointe my ſelf unto the discoverye and populaſon of the western Colony in Virginia. I wiſhe my deſire miſtige goe accompanied wth any of the leaſte acceptable

able service therein, yet durste I promise by due endevo^{rs} to give my beste addi^{con} unto the same. I sente alsoe a tre in that of myne enclosed, concerninge the passage of our merchantes aboue theire occasions in Spaine, & Portugall, whereof I thoughte fyt to acquainte yo^r honor. I am induced nowe againe in this my second to offer boldnes, w^{ch} goeth in the due comenda^{con} of this bearer M^r Rowland Jones Collector of his Ma^{ts} Customes wthin the porte of Bridgwater, whoe intendeth to be a suter unto yo^r ho[:] upon some occasions throughe w^{ch} he maie obtaine a setled determina^{con} to contynewe in Somerset, by many desired there, beinge of credicte, by meanes of his honeste, discrete, & respective carriage. May it please yo^r good L^p to yelde him your favourable furtherance, either by yo^r tres or otherwise upon allowable grounds of his reasonable futs, the w^{ch} he shall make manifeste, doubtles he will not onlie highlie holde him self bound to yo^r honor, but also my self will rest most thankfull in his behalfe.⁶¹² He is well knowne to the Lls of Northampton and Suffolk as I was tolde in London, in regard of his true and faithefull services done to the lord vicount Byndon⁶¹³ of whome he was long time a follower. Even soe referringe bothe my self, and him unto yo^r moste ho^{ble} and gratiouſe favours doe commytt the fame wth my many

⁶¹² This request was granted, as will be seen by the following:

"Whereas M^r George Popham his Ma^{ts} Customer of the Porte of Bridgwater and the members thereof beinge by my good likinge and consente gonn in the late voya^{ge} to Virginia," etc., appoints Rowland Jones as Deputy during his absence.

End: 1607. From Copy of Letters Patent, Cecil Papers, 124/115.

⁶¹³ Thomas Howard, third Viscount Binden, created Knight of the Garter in May, 1606. His sister Douglaſs Howard married Sir Arthur Gorges of Chelsea, a cousin of Sir Ferdinando, and a man of distinction in the reigns of Elizabeth and James, especially for his literary attainments. Viscount Binden died in 1619, when the title became extinct.

many praiers unto the preservaçon of the Highest, and
moste humblie take my leave. From Plymouth this Laſte
of Maye 1607.

Yo^r honors moste humble to commaund /

GEORGE POPHM.

Add: To the righte honorable my verie good lord the Earle of Salisbury principall Seacretary to his moste excellente Ma^{ty} and of his highnes moste honorable privye Counfaile. End: ult^o May 1607 Captaine Popham to my Lo. from Plymmouth. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 121/113.)

HENRY CHALLONS TO THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.

RIGHT HONORABLE what I wrote your Lordship in my last as dispearinge to be releved by our Ambaffador here, experience hath ever fithens continewally approved, for I weeklye folicitinge him wth my lre^s could never obtayne any materiall anſwere untill the 5 of Iune w^{ch} was that the Conde de Leamos who is president of the Councell for the Indias, answered him that rather then ſuch as wear taken in those parts ſhould want an exicutioner, he wold ſerve for hangman himſelfe, and farther writes in an other that the Conde de Leamos⁶¹⁴ had writen to the Contractaço here but writs not whether to hang us or diſcharge us. I repearinge to the president of the Contractaço here as defirous to knowe my

⁶¹⁴ Don Ferdinando de Castro, Andrade y Portugal; fourth Marqués de Sarria and seventh Conde de Lemos. He was the representative of a powerful Spanish family, and occupied ſeveral important offices as ambaffador at the Papal Court, President of the Council

of the Indias, Viceroy and Captain-General of the Kingdom of Naples, etc. He died in 1623. For ſome account of the family *vide Blason de Eſpaña*, by A. De Burges, Madrid, 1858, Vol. III. p. 259.

my paynes acquainted him that I underftod that he had receaved letters as concerninge our businis who answered not a word and that we wear merely forgotten, and that no man spake for us else could we not but have bin delivered long fithence We Increase diffeases and debts six pence in England is not a peny heare Robert Cooke is already dead. the boteson in prison stabd in the belly In judgment not like to recover the Indians ar taken from me and made slaves our ship is fonke in the river not like to be recovered we Indure all the Indignities and extreamities that is possible as to hire hes Ma^{tie} her Ma^{tie} and especially Certayne of your honours of our privie Concell most untruly and vilely reproched. Most humbly besechinge your Lordship to conceave herof and relive us before it be to late. We pray god lengthen your honorable days who must shorten our miseris or else we perishe all.

June 26 filo nova [1607].

(Cecil Papers 121/114.)

HENRY CHALLONS TO THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.

My humblest dutie. Sithence my last unto your Lordship, M^r Davice hath Receaved from our Ambassadours Secretary a line or two as concerninge us, the Contrarietie wherof to his former writings, approves his Carelesnis of us, and the veritie of the presedents speeche heare, w^{ch} was that we weare mearely forgotton, and that nobody spake for us, else coulde we not but have had libertie longe fithens. I most humbly beseeche your L. not to be disceaved by the Ambassidors letters, for I doubt not but whiles he servs the Spaniards

Spaniards torne in suffringe us to perishe by loathfome and tedious Imprisonments, whome there lawes cannot touche for offence he furnisheth your Honour wth many glofinge writinges from w^{ch} his delusions good Lord deliver us. My boteson that I wrote to your Lordship was stabde, is dead, sithence, and I was faine, though they had murthered him in prison to pay the fees of the house er I could have him out, to burie him, in the Fields. All those that have Died in prison, have bin most unchristianlike used. Some of them have had there brains beaten out after they weare dead, there noses ears and privie members Cutt of. And Robert Cooke, the first that died had a Stringe tied to on of his legs and was Draged downe a peare of Stairs of thirtie steps affirminge they wold teach the Lutarane the way to hell. they forced his mouth open and puttinge a gag into it powred into his dead mouthe three potts of water Sayinge the Boracha⁶¹⁵ should have drinke Inough These extremities they use with us as I conceave to Inforce our men to there Religion, it doth much terrifie them. the god of all Strength strengthen and Comforde us all, there tiranies & Injustices ar Intollorable. I am comanded on paine of . 300 . Ducats and castigation. not to speake wth the naturalls, for the[y] Conceave that by my means they Cannot make them Chrif- tians. they will eyther Convert them, or by Famine Con- founde

⁶¹⁵ *Borracha* in Spanish denotes a wine-skin, and *borrachon*, a drunkard. The Spaniards affected to regard the English as great drinkers; hence the application of the term to the dead sailor.

The cruelty of these bigoted cut-throats is no more conspicuous in this case than others in which the Lutheran

was the subject of religious rage; and if the reign of Elizabeth had accomplished no more for humanity than to cripple, as it did, this odious power. it achieved enough to glorify itself, while nothing can be more offensive to the Anglo-Saxon heart than the base truckling of James to Spanish power.

founde them for they ar almost starved already. There is three of my Company more not like to live, and I Judge the on of them Cannot Recover. I beseech your Honour in Christianitie consider of us, and let us wth Speede have some Comforte, else will it com to late for most of us, for there hath bin a Speach generally spread throughout all this Cittie, that the Inglishe Captaine Cominge to his Company in prison was slaine. But I thanke god I mist the hower, if there weare any Intention of such an action, as is much to be suspected by reason of such a Speach spread and howe littell they value the life of a Lutarane, as they terme us God and our Kinge value our Religion better, and suffer not his subjects miseries and Contempt of our Religion to be there Contents. Prayinge for your Lordship I most Humbly Implore relief in Season for our Extremities Cannot indure Delais.

More likely to die then live in your Lordships service /

HENRY CHALLONS.

Iulie 3 stilo nova.

Endorsement to this and preceding letter: The Copies of my two last letters sent to my L Chiefe Justice. 1607. Copies of M^r Challons tres to the Lo. Ch: Justice. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 121/172.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONER^{LL} my humble duty remembred. M^r New port⁶¹⁶ (unto whome these Hrs were directed) did set sayle from

⁶¹⁶ Christopher Newport was one of the founders of Virginia. He had achieved fame for bravery and skill as a seaman in the wars with Spain before sailing for the New World on December 19th, 1606, at which time he was forty-one years of age. His last voyage to Virginia was made in 1610, and after his

from hence on fryday, beinge the laste of Iuly; I was not at home when hee came firste into the harbor, but I understande so much by him since, as I conceave a possiblity of great good to bee don in the place where they ar; the Harbor beinge comodiouse, the Contry ferteel, the Clime healthfull, but the people daungerouse to bee dealt with, beinge by nature valiante and in number many. Wherfor in my poor opinion, it were necessary that all the haste possible were used for the supply of those that bee there; for if any disaster happen unto them, it wilbee a great discouragement and discountenance to the attempte; but if they bee royally seconded, there is no doubte of successe, so industry and good goverment be not wantinge.

I have understande of your Lo^{pps} most honorable care had for the release of our poore men that ar Prysoners in Spayne, whose names I have sent to Captayne Barlee to be dd to your Hon^r handes, yealdinge all possible thankes to your good Lor^{pp} in theyr behalfe, whose estate wthout your Lor^{ps} favour is desperate, for that they ar in the handes of such who delighte themselves in doinge wronges to all and right to none, unles forsed by Necessity, contrary to theyr naturall custom. I forbear to speake of them what I thinke, bycause I do not desire, it should bee thought I am delighted in the controversyes of Princes, but I pray god, comon experience do not make it to manifest our daunger procured by the word Peace, purchassed (as themselves confess) for theyr necessity, not of love to our Prince or Nation.

I

his return home he prepared an account has since been published under the title of his experiences in America. This of *Discoveries in America*.

I cannot as yet giue any ashurance to your Lor^{pp} of the particulars of the estate of the Contry where wee have sent our Colony. But (if I bee not much deceaued) it will prove it selfe to bee such, as there wilbee great reason to induce som noble nature to undertake throughly the protection for accomplishment therof; it beinge a designe for the æternizinge of an honerable memory. The w^{ch} (if I durste bee so boulde) I would rather wish your worthy selfe to undertake then any subject whatsoever, both in respect of your wisdom to understand thinges of this nature, as also your eminent favor and great authority in the Co~~m~~onwealth, all matters of high consequence. For myne owne parte if our Nation may bee so fortunate as to finde your exception therof, I wilbee reddy and thinke myselfe most happy, if you shall vouchsafe, to make use, or co~~m~~aunde my best indeavors, to go my selfe thither in such fashion as you shall thinke mee able to doe his Ma^{ty} and my Contry service. Howsoever I beseech your good Lor^{pp} to rest undoubtedly perswaded that my life, and all I have shalbee for ever,

Your Lor: humbly to bee co~~m~~aunded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH this 7th of August 1607.

Add: To the Right Hor^{ll}: my very good Lord the Erle of Salisbury: these.

End: 7 August 1607. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 122/108.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT Ho^u: my humble duty remembred. I haue heerewth fente such letters and notes, as ar late com to my handes out of Spayne from M^r Challounes by the w^{ch} it may appeare what hath ben don on all partyes, and what hope ther is of the relieve of those poore afflicted creatures, whose miseryes ar made the greater, by how much our Nation is helde in contempte and disdayne, reposinge no credet to any proofes, or oathes, made by any of ours, who ar not of theyr religion; for my owne parte, I am a servant to his Ma^{te} and a private person in my contry, and therfor do not know of my selfe, what course to take, to give them comfort, or relieve: theyr imployment had a good intente, and was drawen on by his highnes gratiouse allowance therof; wherfor, my truste is, (as a humble petitioner in theyr behalfe) that it would please your Lor. out of your Ho^r care and commisera-
tion of theyr state, to vouchsafe to effecte the meanes of theyr releasementes, wth what conviensy is possible, and leaue to time, and after opportunity, the recoveringe of satisfac-
tion for our Ship and goods; Thusmuch I presume humbly to desire in their behalves, (who hath now, not any other left, that will remember your good Lo^{: of theyr miseryes, and continew a petitioner for them:}

This to their Lo^{:pps} is an advertisement of such newes, as I haue receaved of the Spanish fleete; and theyre purposes; as also, fom reasons to induce, the daunger that may infue, if to much credet bee given to theyr pretexes; wth my re-
membrance

membrance to theyr Lo:^{ps} of my fute to have this place better furnished wth provisions necessary for defence; In the w^{ch}, I humbly beseech your Ho^r favor, and that it will please you, to advaunce it, in such a measure, as your wisdom shall thinke good, wherin, I will alwayes rest, as many wayes I am bounde

Your Lo^{ps} in all servise duriinge life to bee commaunded /
FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH the 3. Octob: 1607.

Add: To the right Hono^{ll} my very good Lorde the Earle of Salisbury these.
End: 3 Octob: 1607 S^r. Fardi. Gorges to my Lord. frō Plymouth. 1 p.

(Cecil Papers 122/107.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

My bounden duty to your good Lo^{ps} remembred. There is lately com to my handes, advertisement of a Spanish fleete of fowrefkore fayle of Shipps, that ar in a reddines, and that the Kinge of Spayne hath appoynted them to make theyr randivos (under the commaunde of Don Lewis) at the South Cape, there they were to attende certayne Gallyes and shipps, that com out of the straigtes, wth souldiors and som other necessaryes for y^e voyadge; about the 28 of August the fayde Dun Lewis arived at the foresayde place wth 42 fayle, and 38 Gallyes, and left in Cales 8 shipps more, to com after him, as faste as they could bee furnished with men.

There is a stay made of all the Hamburgers and theyre men ar imprisoned.

They have 15 millions of treasure safely arived, and the fleete

fleete for Nova Hispania, hath given over theyr voyadge, bycause they ar otherwise to bee employed for this present.

It is farther sayd, that the lande souldiers (w^{ch} ar in this service) ar in all, som 12000, and that they purpose to go for Barbary, they ar royally furnished wth all sortes of provision. An other brute ther is that they intende to go about the North part of England for Embden; and ther is neither of these, but beare som shew of likelyhood; but for my owne part (under your Lo: ^{ps} corrections) I see no reason, but it may well be doubted, if their purpose on Callis had taken effect, they would have past alonge the narrow seas, and have harbored themselves in that roade, and it is the more likely, for that they were furnished wth pilatts out of those partyes, where if they had arived, and joyned wth the forses of the Arch Duke what could have hindred them, to haue landed where they had most desired? But now it is to be hoped (by all good subjects) the neck of that designe is broaken. Notwthstandinge it may well be feared, that they have som plot on Ireland, for ther ar diverse reas ons to induce a probability therof, the w^{ch} I doubt not ar better knowne to your Lo: ^{ps} then to mee. Howsoever, seinge ther is an army a foote, (and that it is apparent to all men of experience or understandinge, how daungerouse a thinge it is, to hazard the inconveniences that may infue, by suffrigne an advantage to be taken by a puissant prince, on a nation besotted in a calme of peace) it were not inconvenient providently to prevent the worse, the w^{ch} I am ashured your Lo: ^{pps} in your grave wisdoms hath already performed. Notwthstandinge, for as much as it hath pleased his Ma^{te} to esteeme mee worthy to bee his poore servant in a place of

that eminency, and importe that this is of, I could not otherwise discharge my selfe of my duty then by the way to signify thus much, and wthall to remember your good Lo^{ps} of my ould shute, for the thorrow furnishinge of thinges necessary for the defense therof, in case ther should bee cause to use it, wth out w^{ch} (as it is weel knowne to your Lo^{ps}) if ought fall out otherwise then well, I ought not to bee held blameworthy, in as much as I can but demaunde what I want, and that beinge had, do what is possible, so dependinge on your Lo^{ps} favorable construction of what I have sayde, and earnestly desiringe all happines to follow your grave counfells, humbly take my leave restinge

Your Lo^{pps} in all servise to be commaunded/

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH the 3 of October 1607.

Add: To the right Hono^{ll} my very good Lo^{ds} the Lordes of his Maties most Hono^{ll}: privy Counsell, these. End: 3 Octob. 1607. S^r Fardi: Gorges to the LL. of the Councell. 2 pp.

(Cecil Papers 123/77.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONOR^{LL}. This present day, heere is arived on of our shipps out of the partes of Virginia, wth greate newes of a fertill Contry, gallant Rivers, stately Harbors, and a people tractable, (so discrete Courses bee taken wth them,) but no returne, to satisfy the expectation of the Adventurers, the w^{ch} may bee an occasion, to blemish the reputacion of the designe, although in reason it could not bee otherwayes, both bycause of the shortnes of theyr aboad there (w^{ch} was but two monethes) as also, theyr want of meanes to follow theyr

theyr directions, theyr number being so small, and theyr busines so great, beside in very truthe, the defect and wante of understandinge of som of thosē employed, to performe what they weare directed unto, from whence, there did not only proceede confusion, but thorough pride and arrogansay, faction, and privat resolusion, as more at large your Lor: shall perceave, by my next, wth the particulars therof in the meane time, I have sente this inclosed, humbly beseeching, it may bee deliuered to S^r Fransis Popham, whome I doubt not, but will at large accquaynte your Lor^{pp}. what he receaveth, although I beleeve hee will not heare of all, that hath paste. For my owne opinion, I am confident, there will bee divers reasons to perswade a constant resolusion, to persue this place, as firste the bouldnes of the Coaste, the easines of the navigation, the fertility of the soyle, and the severall sortes of Commodityes, that they ar ashured, the contry do yead, as namely fish in the season, in great plenty, all the Coste alonge mastidge for shipps, goodly oakes, and Cedars, wth infinit other sortes of trees, Rason, hempe, grapes very fayre and excellent good, wherof they have already made wine, much like to the Claret wine that comes out of France, rich Furrs if they can keepe the Frenchmen from the trade, as for mettalls, they can say nothinge, but they ar confidente there is in the Contry, if they had meanes to seeke for it, neither could they go so high, as the Allom mines ar,⁶¹⁷ w^{ch} the Savages doth ashure them there is great plenty

⁶¹⁷ If the colonists had not seen these alum-mines, how came they to suppose that such mines existed? The Indians could have known nothing of the nature

of the mineral, though it is possible that the colonists found specimens of pyritic shales in the vicinity of their camps, and were told by the Indians that farther

plenty of. Thusmouch I humbly desire may satisfy your Lor^{pp} at this present, untill I bee better able to furnish your Lor^{pp}, wth the rest that they can say. I haue likewise sent your Lor^{pp} M^r Challoones his letter, brought mee out of Spayne, wherby it may appeare unto your Hono^r what hopes hee had at the writinges therof; howsoever for my particular I do infinitely thinke myselfe bounde to your Lor^{pp} in theyr behalfe, and do yealde humble thankes for your Hono^r: favor, shewed towardes them; theyr Case is miserable, and the wronges profered them infinite. I know not how to helpe it, but humbly to implore for theyr re-leasess

ther away such rock might be found in large quantities. It is probable that, in accordance with a prevalent custom, the Popham Expedition had a mineralogist attached to it, and that when he found any mineral of value he questioned the natives respecting it, in order to learn from them if it existed anywhere in considerable quantities. Such was Thomas Graves, subsequently sent to New England "to exercise his scientific qualifications," and who is described as "a man experienced in iron workes, in salt workes, in measuring and surveying of lands, and in fortifications, in lead, copper, and alum mynes." Be this as it may, Sir Ferdinando stated a fact to Cecil, as large deposits of pyritic shale, or more popularly alum stone, exist near the Sagadahoc. It occurs at the mouth of Sprague's River, near Smallpoint, in Georgetown; and an extensive belt of it extends through the towns of Lisbon and Litchfield. On Jewell's Island alum has been successfully manufactured from pyritic shales within a recent period.

At the time when Sir Ferdinando wrote this letter, the manufacture of

alum was exciting public attention throughout Europe, and was considered an enterprise of great importance in England; indeed, property bearing pyritic shales appeared to the subjects of the English monarch almost as valuable as property bearing the precious metals appears to us in this age. A few years before, Sir Thomas Chaloner, a gentleman of considerable scientific attainment and an extensive traveller, had discovered pyritic shales on his estate in Yorkshire, and was successfully manufacturing it in spite of the anathemas of the Pope, who foreseeing interference with a profitable monopoly which the Papal States had long enjoyed, hastened to lay the enterprise under the ban of the Church; but Popes' bulls had ceased to terrify Englishmen, twenty-two chests of the precious documents having been publicly burnt a short time before in Plymouth, and the manufacture of alum in England flourished. From this it will be seen that Sir Ferdinando had reason to take a deep interest in alum-mines on the Sagadahoc.

leaves those who ar beste able to do them good and to ease theyr necessityes in what I may, all the rest of the adventurers having given them over. Even so recommending your Lor^{pp} to Gods protection I humbly take my leave resting in all servise during my life

Your Lor^{pps} humbly to bee Comaunderd /

FARD: GORGES.

I should have remembred your Lor^{pp} that the Contry doth yealde Sauceparelia ⁶¹⁸ in a great abundance and a certayne filke that doth grow in small Codds, ⁶¹⁹ a sample wherof I will send this night or to morrow.

PLYMOUTH this 1 of December late at night 1607.

Add: To the Right Honor^{ll} my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury theise.

End: pri. Decemb. 1607 S^r Fardi. Gorges to my Lord. 2 pp.

(Cecil

⁶¹⁸ The sarsaparilla, at this time so highly esteemed in Europe, was brought from Spanish America, and on account of the monopoly of the trade by Spain was of high cost. Its virtues are said to have been discovered to the world by a Spanish physician, Dr. Parillo; hence its name from *Zarza*, a prickly shrub, and *Parillo*, the name of the learned *medico*, equivalent to *Parillo's shrub*. It belongs to the family *Smilacææ*. The wild plant sent home by the colonists was one of many varieties of the *Araliaceæ* found growing from Canada as far south as Tennessee; and while it did not possess the virtues of the Spanish plant, became useful, especially for flavoring beer.

⁶¹⁹ There are several varieties of the

Asclepiadaceæ, all having pods or follicles containing long silky down, which has given to them the name of silkweed. The plant here alluded to, which attracted the attention of our early colonists, and which their fervid imaginations wrought into a botanical wonder that would make England independent of Indian looms and revolutionize the silk industry of the world, was without doubt the common milkweed, whose long pods, bursting in the golden sunshine of autumn, disclosed to them a wealth of silky filaments as fair to the eye as the glossy roll evolved from Oriental cocoons, but, alas! lacking the fibre which would render them capable of being wrought into enduring form.

(Cecil Papers 123/81.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF SALISBURY.

RIGHT HONORA^{LL}: It seemes to bee moſte certayne, that ther is no enterprise, (how well ſo ever intended,) but hath his particular impedimentes meeting wth many oppofitions, and infinite Croſſes, as in this ſmall attempt, (begun by my Lo: Cheefe Justice out of a noble zeale to his prince and Contry, (amongſt many others,) it is experienſed) for firſte as hee was honorable himſelfe, ſo hee thought all others weare, beleeving what they toulde him, and truſtinge to what, they promiſed, by w^{ch} meanes, his Lor^{pp}. was not a little deceaved of what hee expeſted, for neither were his proviſions anſwerable to his Charge beſtowed, nor the persons imployed ſuch as they ought; in as much as the wantes of the on was cauſe of inabiſty to perorme what was hoped; & the Childeſh factions, ignorant timerous, and ambitioneſe perſons, (for of that naſure I founde the composition to bee) hath bread an unſtable reſolution, and a generall conuſion, in all theyr affayres. For firſte the President himſelfe is an honest man, but ould, and of an unwildy body, and timerouſly fearfull to offende, or conteſt wth others that will or do oppoſe him, but otherwayes a diſcreete carefull man. Cap- tayne Gilberte is deſcribed to mee from thenſe to bee deſirouſe of ſupremafy, and rule, a loſe life, prompte to ſenſuality, little zeale in Religion, humerouſe, head ſtronge, and of ſmall judgment and experienſe, other wayes valiant inough, but hee houldes that the kinge could not give away that, by Pattent, to others, w^{ch} his Father had an Act of Parliament for,

for,⁶²⁰ and that hee will not bee put out of it in haste, wth many such like idle speeches, w^{ch} (allthough hee bee powrlesse to performe oughte) weare not unfit to bee taken notice of bycause it weare good in my opinion that all such occasion were taken away, as may hinder the publique proceedinge, and let the cause of sedicion bee plucked up by the Roote, before it do more harme; besides hee hath sent (as I am farther informed) into England for divers of his freindes, to com to him, for the strenghning of his party on all occasions (as hee termes it) wth much more that I have receaved notis of to this effect; w^{ch} I thought it my duety to advertise your Lor^{pp} in time, that som course may bee taken, to prevent mischiffe. w^{ch} must bee don by immediate authority from thense, taking no farther notise heeroft, then your wifdom shall thinke good, but the better to manifest, and to bringe all to light, wthout callinge the authors in Quaestion, your Lor^{pp} may bee pleased to sende downe present commaunde, to intercept all letters whatsoever, and to whomefoever, and to cause them to bee sent up, (for I know in whose possession these letters ar yet, and I thinke I shall finde the meanes to keepe them from being delivered in haste. As for the reste of the Persons employed, they ar either fit for theyr Places or tolerable, But the Preacher is moste to bee commended, both for his Paynes in his place, and his honest indevors; as also is Captayne Robert Daues,

and

⁶²⁰ The patent to which Sir Ferdinando refers, and upon which Ralegh Gilbert based his hopes, is to be found in Hazard's *Historical Collections*, Vol. I. pp. 24-28. This patent had, however, been assigned by Sir Humphrey

to Sir Thomas Gerrard and Sir George Peckham, according to a petition to be seen in the Public Records Office, Domestic Correspondence, Elizabeth, Vol. CXLVI. No. 40.

and likewise M^r Turner theyr Phisitian, who is com over, to follicite theyr supplyes, and to informe the state of every particular. I haue fayde in my lafte to your Lor^{pp} what I thinke how necessary it is, this busines shoulde bee thoroughly followed, but if I should tell your Hon^r. how much I am affected unto it in my owne nature, it may bee that my commendations therof, would bee of the lesse credit, but I desire in my soule, that it would please God, his M^{ty} would take it into his owne handes, unto whome (of right) the conquest of kingdoms doth appertayne, and then should I thinke my selfe moste happy to receave such imployment in it, as his highnes shoulde thinke mee fit for, and I woulde not doubte, but wth a very little charges, to bringe to passe infinite thinges; I will say no more of it, at this present, only I make no quaeftion but that your Lor^{pp}. will finde it to be of greater moment, then it can easily bee beleevered to bee; I haue sent unto your Lor^{pp} the Journalls that were taken by on of the Shippes, as I receaved it from theyr going out, untill theyr returne, by w^{ch} the navigation will appeare to bee as easy as to Newfound lande, but much more hopefull. Even so commanding your Lor^{pp} to Gods holy protection I will ever rest during life

Your Lorsh^{pps} humbly to bee commaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH 3 of December.

Add: To the Right Hono^{ll}, my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury. End: 3
Decemb. 1607 S^r Fardi: Gorges to my Lord. 2 pp.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 120/66.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONOR^{LL}: Our seconde shipp is returned out of the partes of Virginia, but wth advertisement of nothinge more, then wee receaved at the first, only the extremity of the winter, hath ben great, and hath sorely pinched our People, notwithstanding (thankes bee unto God) they have had theyr healthes exceedingly well, although theyr Cloathes were but thinne and theyr dyets poore, for they have not had on sicke from the time they came thither, to the instant of theyr cominge away. Y^e President, and his People, feedes us still wth hopes of wonders, that wilbee had from thence in time, but I feare mee, ther must go other manner of spiritts to settle those busines, before it wilbe brought to passe, for I finde the continuance of theyr idle proceedinges, to have mutch prejudicall the publique good, devidinge themselves into factions, each disgracing the other, even to the Savages, the on emulatinge the others reputation amongst those brutish people; whose conversation, & familiarity they haue most frequented, w^{ch} is on of the cheefest reas ons, wee haue to hope in time, to gayne that, w^{ch} presently cannot bee had, they shew themselves exceeding subtil and conninge, concealing from us the places, wheare they haue the comodityes wee seeke for, and if they finde any, that hath promised to bringe us to it, those that came out of England instantly carry them away, and will not suffer them to com neere us any more.

These

These often returns wthout any comodity, hath much dis-
couraged our adventurers, in espetiall in these partyes,
although in common reason, it bee not to bee looked for,
that from a savage wildernes, any great matters of moment
can presently bee gotten, for it is arte, and industry that
produceth those thinges, even from the farthest places of the
worlde, and therfor I am afayde, wee shall have much a doo,
to go forwards as wee ought, wherfor it weare to bee wished,
that som furtherance might bee had (if it weare possible)
from the cheefe springe of our happines, I meane his Ma^{ty}.
who at the laste, must reap the benefit of all our travell, as
of right it belongs unto him; besides if it please your Lo^{pp}
to looke into it, wth those eyes, wth the w^{ch} you pearce the
greatest, and most obscure conjectures, you will finde it most
necessary, it should bee so, both for many publique, and
private reas ons as first the certaynty of the commodityes,
that may bee had from so fertill a foyle, as that is, when it
shalbee peopeled, as well for buildinge of shippinge, havinge
althinges risinge in the place, wherwith to do it, as also may
other hopes therof to infew, as the increase of the Kinges
Navy, the breedinge of marriners, the imployment of his
People, fillinge the world wth expectation, and satisfyinge his
subiectes wth hopes who now ar sicke in despayre, and in time
will growe desperate through necessity, also hee shall seafe
that to himselfe, & to his posterity, thew^{ch} hee shall no
sooner quite, but his nighbors will enter into, and therby
make themselves greate, as hee might have don, for at this
instant, the french ar in hande wth the natives, to practise
upon us, promisinge them, if they will put us out of the
Contry, and not trade wth none of oures, they will com unto
them.

them, and give the succors, agaynst theyr Enemyes, and as our People heares, they have ben this yeare wth fowre shippes to the Southwardes of them, som 50 Leag: and the truthe is, this place is so stored wth excellent harbors, and so boulde a coaste, as it is able to invite any activelie minded, to indevor the possessinge therof, if it weare only to keepe it out of the handes of others. I could say much more in this, but I am loathe to bee over troblesom to your Lor^{pp} and therfor I will thus conclude under your Lor^{pp's} Favor, that I wish his highnes would bee pleased, to adverter but on of his middle forte of shippes, wth a small pinnace, and vthall to give his letters, and commission, to countenance and authorefy, the worthy enterpriser, and I durste my selfe, to undertake, to procure them to bee victualld by the aduenturers, of these partes, for the discovery of the whole coaste alonge, from the firste to the seconde Colony, espetially to spende the moste parte of the time in the searche of those places allready possessed, and for myne owne parte, I should bee proude, if I might bee thought worthy to bee the man, comaunded to the accomplishment heerof, by his Highnes, and should thinke it a seafon well spente, wherin I should have so many hopes, to serve my Contry, wherof the least would bee in this sleepy seafon, the inablinge of my owne judgment, and experience, in these maren causes, therby, the better heerafter on all occasion, to discharge my duty to my Soverayne. Alw^{ch} I humbly recomand to your Hon: wisdom, to bee so handled as you shall vouchsafe to thinke good, for the reputation of him, whome you have tyed to you, by many obligations, and even so I

will

will humbly comend your Lo^{pp} to Gods holy protection,
restinge ever

Your Lo^{pps} humbly to bee comaunded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH this 7 of February.

Add: To the Right Hon^{ll} my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury. End: 7
Febr 1607. S^r Ferd. Gorges to my Lord. 3 pp.

(Cecil Papers 120/130.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR R. CECIL.

RIGHT HONOR^{ll} This enclosed I thought it fit to send unto your Lor^{pp}, that by it your hon^r might perceave what effecte your noble favoure hath wrought, that soe worthilye endevored the libertie of thosse poore distressed soules that have this longe indured afflxcion contrary to comon reason: but by theire proceedinges it is manifeste in how base esteeme they houlde our people, beinge carelesse what indignityes, or outrages they offer us, but I wish it might but please his Ma^{tie} to give his servantes leave to use theire best meanes to right them selves of this theire insupportable wrongs, provided that they violate noe article of peace, farther than they them selves have done in this: Neather doe I see, in my poore understandinge, whye his Highnesse may not make it free by his proclamation, for all his subiectes to make the warre in the Indes wher he hath concluded noe peace, nor whether his subiectes cannot goe, but to their losse, & ruen. It is reported, that the French Kinge hath taken this course, & that his people ar now in preparation

Ad pedes serenisimi regis sui humillime se proceruit Georgius Pophamius praesidens
 secundocolorum Virginie. Si diuinae magestatu tue placuerit patientie aero.
 obseruantis mox ac denotissimo quambus indigno pauca recipere, ab Altitudinis mea
 caritate vel minimis alia nare arbitror. Quonia in dea gloria sublimitatis Vestre
 indicani magestati tue noti fieri, quod agri Virginios et moassenos nullus
 in orbe terrarum magis admiratur quia Dominus Jacobus Brittanorum imperator
 propter admirabilem institutam ac incredibilem constantiam quae istarum Principiarum
 nativis non mediocrem perfecta, letitia, dicentibus in super nullu esse deo vere
 adorandu preter illu Domini Jacobi in cuius dictione atq; imperio liberenter
 militare voluerint Tahaniada vni ex nativis qui Brittanum afferunt vestras
 laudes ac virtutes hic illis illustrant. Quid et quantu in his negocis subeundis
 et illorum amicos confor mandis Valete, eouis sit iudicis qui domi voluntarunt
 scient agnoscens omnes conatus meos porire cu in compatione officij debet
 erga principiis habeantur. Optima me terret opinio dei gloria facile in his
 regionibus eluciscere, Vestae magistratus imperiu amplificari, et Brittanorū
 tempub. breviter augmentari: quod ad mercionom attinet, omnes indegena
 constanter affirmant his messe provincijs nubes a mysticas maciam, et
 mamomou: pretoria Betumen, Iynnū Brizzelie, Cuckinela et Ambrygrie
 cu multis: magni moment et Valeris ~~et~~ eaq; maxima quide mandantia
 super affirmatiū & mecu auctor esse mare aliqd modus aduersa vel occidentali
 huius prouincia parte notis plus septem diezu iteneris spaciū a presidio
 nostro. Sancti Georgij in Sagadahoc amplius latu et profundius, cuius
 terminos prorsus ignorant, quod aliud esse non potest nisi australi,
 tendens ad regiones Chine quae longe ab his partibus procul dubio est. ~
 non possunt. Si ergo tunc placueret distinos habere oculos tuos apertos m
 subiecto certificacionis mea, nondubito quin Celsitudine Vestra absolut opus
 deo gratissimum, magnificientie Vestra honorificius et seripub tua maxime
 conducibile, quod ardenter precibus vehementer exopto et a deo —
 optimo maximo contendendo ut regis mei Domini Jacobi magestatem qua
 duitissime seruat gloriosam prefatio Sancti Georgij in Sagadahoc de.
 Virgina 13° Decembris 1607

Seruus' Vestae magestatis' omnmodis devotissimus
 Georgius Pophamius

will
resti

PL

Add:
F

R
un-
effec-
end-
have
but
estee
digr
plea
best
wro
fartl
doe
may
ject
cluc
to t]
hatl

aration

aration to goe thether on all handes. But I cease farther to speake hereof, unlease it may be thought, I urge more then is fitt at this tyme. As concerninge our Plantation, we have found the meanes to encourage our selves a newe, and have sent two shippes from Topsome for the supplies of those that be there, wth victualles & other necessaryes, havinge sett downe the meanes how we shalbe able, by Maye next, to send one more of 200 tunnes. We frame unto our selves many reas ons of infinite good, that is likely to befall our countrye, if our meanes fayle us not to accomplish it. But we hope, before Su^mer be past, to give such satisfaction to the wordle here of, as none that ar lovers of their Nation, but will (for one cause or other) be willinge to wish it well at the leaft, what crosses foever we have receaved heretofore. Yet I am verely perswaded, that y^e end will make amendes for all; For it is sure, it is a very excellent countrye both in respecte of the clyme, as also the multitude of goodlye Rivers & harboures it doth abound with all; besides the severall co^modityes that a fertile soyle will yeelde; when arte, and industrie shalbe used for the ease of Nature, the wh feemes to shewe her selfe exceedinge bountifull in that place. But, here of to trowble your Lor^{pp}: Noe more at this present. I humbly co^mend your Hon^r to Godes holye protection, & rest during lyfe

Your Lordshippes in all service to be co^maunded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH March 20, 1607.

Add: To the right hono^{ll}: my very good Lord the Earle of Salisbury these.
End: 20 Martii 1607. S^r Far: Gorges to my Lord. 1 p.

(Cecil

(Cecil Papers 120/154.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF SALISBURY.

RIGHT HONORABLE I haue forborne to make answr^e to yo^r Lo: of the 18th of March till this instant upon some advertizements that Came to my hannds of likelihooде of a present peace to be concluded betweene the arch-duke and the states of the united provincs, for that I would be bette^r assured thereof by more wayes then one before I tooke vpon me to speake what I thought Concerning yo^r Lo: in that behalf, but since observing the Cariage of theire affaires, I am easely induced to forget that euer I app'hended cause of p^rsent doubt to arise from Fraunce. for I perceave that when they have assured themselves of all they cann expect, and doone all they purpose, his ma^{tie} shalbe advertized the particulers thereof. I know yo^r wisdome is not ignorant of the levitie of a mechanicall people throwne into despaire, for that they see themselves neglected and made neuteralls from whence theire best hopes of succours we^r expected. Nay more they are jealous least theire enemies receave more favo^{rs} then themselves. But not to trouble yo^r Lo: wth more then is needfull, if my understanding, and intelligence doe not much deceaue me, their peace is resolved upon, and therefore it we^r not amiss, in my pore opinion, that it would please his Ma^{tie}, howsoever, to give orde^r to his Governo^{rs} of his Cautionarie Townes to be Carefull of theire dutie, and above all things, if it be not too late to attempt it, it we^r good to stopp the conclusion of what is intended, in as much as ther can nothinge be soe daungerous to his Ma^{tie} as the union

union of Spaine and them, for no man of Judgment and experience will deny, but that all the Ilannds of the world, not made unaccesible by art or unaproachable by nature are subject to him that will assaile them being Lord of the Sea, his highnes having the harts and favo^{rs} of the Low Countrie men did justly inherit that tytle, and soe long might haue beene the less carefull of his Enemyes, altho^{ugh} we haue seene an invading army on our coast when the forcs of both stats wer united. But if they shalbe severed from us how much more easie will it be. and I am verely perswaded that the peace will not soone^r be Concluded on but yo^r Lo. will heare greate words out of Spaine and receave dayly advertizment of many disdainefull pts proffered. I could speake more, w^{ch} in reasone I see likely to ensue, but that I dare not, and doe rathe^r desire pardon fo^r w^t I haue saide allreadie. Yf it may please yo^r Lo. to be so favourable as to be a meanes that my Lo. Treasorer will make even wth us fo^r ou^r entertainement, that I may satisfie some poore men to whom I stand ingaged, I will god willinge be my self at London very shortly more particularly to delive^r to yo^r Lo. w^t my experience hath taught me is probable will ensfew, as alsoe my opinion w^t way the Currant must be turned.

I haue written to the^r Llo. shewinge the state and defects of this place wherin I have indeavoured wth my best understanding to discharge my publike duty, humbly praying yo^r Lo. to vouchsafe it what furtherance yo^r wisdome shall think fitt, beseeching yo^u to Continue yo^r Ho. disposition in advanceinge the relief of those pore wretches that we sent for the discovery of Virginia, dobing nothing, notwthstandinge the mallice of the Divell, that soe unhappely hath wrought our

our Loss of tyme, but that the event will prove bette^r then in truth yo^r Lo. hath reason yet to expect it should, and I verely belieue when it shall once be discovered, and the Commodetyes knowne, yt wilbe thought fitt by yo^r Lo. and the rest of the Llo. that his Ma^{tie} undertake yt as his proper designe, making it an enterprise and imployment fitt for some such noble and generous spirite as his Highnes shall vouchsafe to thinke worthie to be sent his Lieutenant for the government and orderinge of those affaires. Even soe the god of heaven bleſſ yo^r Lo: and make yo^u happie in all yo^r Honorable desires beseeching yo^u to commaund me during my lief as him that is

Yo^r Lo. most humbly to be Commaunded /

FARD. GORGES.

from PLYMOUTH the 7th of April 1607.

Add: To the Right Honorable my verie good Lord the Erle of Salisburie. End:
7 April 1607. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my Lord. 2 pp.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. XXXII. No. 33.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SALISBURY.

RIGHT Ho^{le} I thought it my duty to aduertize yo^r Loppe that Captayne Challones hath made an escape out of Spaine and is arrived here havinge brought wth him his bayle. Which he hath don for that he sawe his cause soe desperate, & his hope soe smale and finding by the manner of their pceeding noe likelyhode of other, then a miserable conclusion of his tedious suite. But (poore gent^l) his wants are soe greate now (he beinge come home) as he hath not meanes to supplie his p'sent necessityes; otherwise he had come

come vppe to haue giuen your Loppe a particular accompte of his knowledge of the affayres of those partes him selfe: As alsoe to haue giuen his dutyfull thancks for those ho^{le} favours it hath pleased yo^r Lo^r to afforde to him, & the rest of his poore people, whome he left in greate extreamity. But those thinges of moment, wth I collecte from his relation, is first a greate Leuey towards of land-souldiers; but it is not knownen whether they are to goe, or what their intent is to doe. Ther is alsoe a comon opinion, y^t the peace wth the Hollanders will not goe forwarde by reason (as they saye) that yo^r Loppe is pleased to oppose yo^r selfe agaynst it, and to giue encowragem^t vnder hand to the Fleminges to make demaunds of unreasonable condicions; for w^{ch} yo^r doinge they dowbt not, but your dayes wilbe shortened, & then they p'sume to frame their busynesse to their better lyking. They p'mize mountaynes vnto them selues, & are perswaded of greate partyes, that they haue in England (when the tyme shall come) y^t are fitt to make use of them. They speake moste basly, & unworthiely of his Ma^{tie}, & alsoe of her Highnesse, & soe vile as it is agaynst the nature of an honest man to write it; nor possible to liue, & heare it (if it be as he reportes) wthout endeuouring to be revenged of it. My desire is not to aggravate matters betweene Princes, or to be noted for a boatafeu in these tymes of peace; the w^{ch} maks mee more sparing then otherwise I would be, fearing least my pfession would be an occasion to perswade y^t what I saie is rather what I wishe, then that which is true indeede. Notwth-standing I beseeche God we repent not to late ouer the to-foone-concluding of peace: for (as now the cafe standeth) o^r kinge

kinge now is by them (as it seemeth) contemned, our people unjustly pceeded wthall, and generally our nation of all other lyke to be debarred from the liberty of making use of Sea, or land; saving wher, & how they list to dispose of us. These reports ar horrable to honeste Natures to heare; and occasions much to griue our people in generall to understand of, whose eares ar dayly filled wth it by every co^mon mariner, that co^mes from thence: Which what it hath bred amongst y^e multitude, I ptest, I am affraied to write. But God is he alone, that directes all things according unto his owne pleasure the accomplishm^t of whose will we must continually pray for, & unto whose holy protection I humbly recommend yo^r Lopp^e to be defended from the malice of those, who ayme at you for that they endeouore the ruine of kinge, and Country; and (as they seeme playnly to confesse) kept from their desire by your carfull vigilancy and foresight. Euen soe craving pardon of yo^r Loppe for my bouldnesse I end, and for ever rest⁶²¹

Yo^r Loppes in all service to be co^maundered /

FARD: GORGES.

from PLYMOUTH May 2 1608.

End: To the Right Ho^{le} my very good Lord the Earle of Salesbury at the Court
glue these. / 2^d May 1608. S^r Fard: Gorges frō Plimmouth.

(State

⁶²¹ This letter and Challons' letters of June 26th and July 3d explain quite fully the true relations between Spain and England at this time. The Spanish arrogantly claimed the entire Western Continent, and seized English ships going towards America, imprisoned and inhumanly abused their crews, and treated the English nation with contempt, while the pusillanimous James took no steps

to defend the national honor. The English representative at the Spanish Court well knew the policy of his master; hence, as Challons says, the poor prisoners were forgotten, having no one to speak for them. Gorges and others were, however, actively at work in their behalf, in spite of the want of governmental aid. Ample evidence of the arrogant claims to the American continent

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. LXV. No. 16.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SALISBURY.

RIGHT HO^{BLE} here ar aryved certaine Marchaunts of London, that lately hath byn taken neere Sylly by English pyratts, whose names and shippes wth their forces I haue herewth sent your Lo^{ipp} as thos exam^{ts} could giue them me, to their best memories, the pticulers of the manⁿ of their usages, (as also the insolency of thefe Barbarous creatures, wth their aprobious speeches of his Ma^{tie}, and scorne of the pñt goûment.) I referr unto their owne relacion, and altho^{gh} yt bee but the frute of such wicked seede, Yet in respect of the geñall exclamaçon, that is made by the Subje^{cts}, especially the poore Marchaunts of thefe ptes, whose peaceable trade is the pñt life of this Countrey, I could not (in dischardg of my duetie) but signifie my poore understanding, how necessarie it is, some pñt Course should be taken for the suppressing of them, that ar such Cankers fretting even unto the Marrow and yf I bee not much disceaued,

continent by the Spaniards is to be found in the official correspondence in English archives. Sir John Digby wrote to Cecil somewhat later than this, that the Spanish ambassador, it was thought, would be directed to request England to remove her plantations from Virginia, and that the English were not to be permitted to plant there. Lying was a fine art in European courts at this time, and at Madrid the most ridiculous tales were set afloat respecting the English attempts at colonization. Even the Spanish ambassador, Don Pedro de Cunega, wrote from London,

that in order to increase the colony of Virginia, he was informed "credibly," an adverb of suspicious import, that the English and barbarous nations were to intermarry; that already forty or fifty Englishmen had married Indian wives, and English women intermingled with the natives. An overzealous clergyman, he says, who condemned the practice, had been wounded. He suggests that they might easily be removed. *Vide Spanish Correspondence, Office of the Public Records, James I., Vol. LXVIII. No. 100, p. 126 et passim.*

disceaued, yt weere no hard matter to suppreffe them, Yf that weere done that might bee, but wthout Chardg it can-
nott bee accomplished, in the meane tyme, for that they
giue yt out they intend to come into Causen Baye, to supply
them selves wth men, and such other things as they want, for
that it is so neere his heighnes Garifon, yf I may but receiue
order to warrant my doeing therein, their cominng thether
shalbe to their litle comfort, and yf the wind favoure them
not the more, I will make some of them giue an accompt
of their doeing at wapping, Yt is true, this peaceable
tymes affords no meaines of ymployments, to the Multitude
of people that daylie doe increase, and manie ar inforced
(by necessitie) to seeke some wayes, to sustaine themselves,
and although this, (of all other bee the worst, yet to such
in whome there is no fealing of honestie, or Religion (as in
the multitude there is litle) even this Course is aplauded,
and therefor their nomber the likelier daylie to increase,
To meeke wth these necessities the Ages past hath employed
great cost in the planting of Colonies in barbarous and
unhabited ptes of the world to the great honor of those
Prynces, and peace of the tyme wherein they lyved, but in
that argument, I will not bee too bold, but humbly referr,
the confidera~~c~~on of all unto your Lo^{pp}s wisdome, unto whome
what is fitting for these tymes, is better knownen then to me,
that Lyue so farr of from all accorrants, and so ignorant of
great matters as I confesse my selfe to be, and therefor I
cease farther to be troblesome, but onlie rest duering life in
all duetie and service,

Your Lo^{pp}s humbly to be Comauunded /

FARD: GORGES.

I must humbly craue pardon of your Lo^{ipp} yf these adver-
tisments come not unto your hands, wth that expedicion, it
might bee expected, the ought to haue done, the packet
being now downe, I ame inforced to send by this meanes, or
by expresse messenger, the latter would ryse to a chardg
extraordinarie, the w^{ch} at this tyme I haue forborne, untill I
know farder yo^r lo^{ipps} pleasure in that behalfe.

From PLYMOUTH this 5th of July. 1611.

[Enclosure.]

THE examinaⁿon of John Collever, John Fisher, Hum-
phry Covsen, Robert Spenser, & John Dofe taken at
Plym^{outh} the 4th of July: 1611.

Who saith that being in a shipp called the Concord of London of the burden of 240: Tonne bound for the straites in whose company there was one other shipp of Dover called the Phillip boniventure they mett (some 16: leages to the Southwards of Syllie the xxvjth of June last past) wth six fayle of pyratts in the one was Captaine Peter Easton in a shippe of 200: Tonne and 24: peces of ordinaunce, another was called William Hewes in a shipp of 160: Tonne, wherein was 16: peces, the others weere Called William Bough, William Wolmer and William Harvy, in like shippes of 160: Tonne and 18: peces in everie shippe saving Harvy who was in a pinke of 60: Tonne wth 8: peces, these fellowes had in them some 600: men all english who take the said Concord and her Consort, but the Concord being a tall shippe, and verie well fitted wth ordinaunce and municion, they caryed away wth them dismissing the shippe

shippe of Dover (after they had kept them one whole weeke,) taking out of her such things as they thought fitt giuen out the ment to come into Causen bay to take in men and such other things as they thought they should be provided wthall in those ptes, in the tyme they weere aboard, the said Easton and his ptner, they mett of Vshing, wth another Confort shippe of their Crewe, being three sayle wherein was for Captaine one Steavens, in a shippe of 300: Tonne and 24: peces of ordinaunce; in a nother of 200: Tonne there was one Franke, and in the third there was one Arthur Geeye in a shippe of 200: Tonne, the w^{ch} it seemed the had taken not long befor being a holander/ These men thus furnished threaten the world and giues yt out the expect to be called in verie shortlie by his Ma^{ties} pardon for 40000: pownds, of whome notwithstanding they speake verie aprobuoueslie, but wthall they say yf the bee not the will take and spoyle all they meeete wth. Of the South Cape there lyes one S^r John Ferne late of London wth Ten sayle of shippes, who likewise is of the same company but he hath bound himselfe to keepe that pte.

They say farder that there is in all, of these kind of vermen to the nomber of 40: sayle, and 2000: men, all English, their coⁿmon Randevos is at Mamora in Barbarie, where they haue Marchaunts of all sorts that trades wth them for all kind of co^modities, especiallie those of leage-horne, this is the effect of what they can say:

FARD: GORGES.

End: for his Mats seruice. To the Right ho^rble my verie good Lo: the Earle of Salisbury Lo: heigh Tresorer of England giue theise att the Court: FARD GORGES. 5 July 1611. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to my lord.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. LXVIII. No. 6.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SALISBURY.

RIGHT HONO^{BLK} I shall not neade to troble your lo^p with a discourse of the severall pasages hapened in thes imployments of Cap: Midelton, beinge him sealfe best able to doe it, whom I have acquaynted with your lo^{ipps} pleasure, Conferninge the pirattes prefent repayre to the Ile of Weyght but it semes (as I wrote unto your lo^{ipp} in my last) they purpose to stand (as yet) upon their garde, untill they here the succeſſe of this Shipp and her Companye, and to that end ar put into Ierland, wher they presume to have ſpedy adver- tisment of all that may concerne them, and ſo if they like not the proceedings to retorne to ther owld trades or to put them ſeaules upon the protextion of the Ducke of florence,⁶²² whether is best for the ſtate of owr Cuntrye, may well be (in my poore opinion) a queſtion, and therfore I shall not neade to advise a parſon ſo wiſe and full of judgmente as is your lo^{ipp} that all arte and expedition be imploied, Conſideringe that thes ar but wilde and timerous people fearfull of everye thinge, ſavinge what may doe them hurte, for that Caufe I have taken a Course as nere as I am able, to affuſe thes ther members, of all good vſage, for ſo was Cap: Mideltons request vnto me, therfore what is farder your lo^{ipps} pleasure to be done, upon knowledge therof, I wilbe careful to ſee accomplished

⁶²² Cosmo II. *de Medici* was at this time Grand Duke of Tuscany, or Florence, as Sir Ferdinando Gorges entitles him. He ſucceeded Ferdinand in 1608, and died in 1621.

accomplished to the vttermost of my power, and shall thinke my sealfe happye if your lo^{ipp} shalbe pleased to Commande my service, to the which office I acknowledge my sealfe always bownde as he that is and wilbe duringe liffe.

Your lo^{ipps} humbly at Commande /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH this 4th of January 1611.

To the Right Hon^{ble} my very good lo: the Earle of Salisbury lo: high Tresorour of England: theis. 4. January 1611. S^r Fardinando Gorges to my lord.

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES TO ROBERT TRELAWNY.⁶²³

AFTER my verie heartie Comendacons: vpon a late petiçon exhibited to his Ma^{tie} in the name of the Merchaunts tradinge wthin the straits & other partes to the southward humblie representing to his princely consideraçon, the infy-nitt spoyles latelie done vpon his good subiects, by pyratts & sea rovers, wch are now growen vnto such an heigh & force, as that they haue wthin these fewe yeeres, taken from this

⁶²³ Robert Trelawny was the father of the Robert mentioned later on in this correspondence. He was a native of St. Germains, in the county of Cornwall, and was bound to serve an apprenticeship with George Burgoyn for eight years, namely, from 1578 to 1586, during which time he was to be employed in Spain, Portugal, and France, and to be made free of the corporation of Fishmongers of London. He became a successful merchant, and "THRIC^E MAYOR OF PLYMOUTH," as an ancient inscription in the Poorhouse near St. Andrew's Church, where he was buried, long informed the world. He was Mayor in 1607, when the Popham colony

left Plymouth harbor, and in the old records of the next year is written, "An extreme dearth of corn happened this year, by reason of extreme frosts (as the like were never seen) the winter going before, which caused much corn to fall away, &c." He was re-elected in 1616, and ten years later was again re-elected to fill the place left vacant by Thomas Sherwill, who, shortly after taking the chair, fell a victim to the plague then raging. Robert Trelawny himself was also swept away by the dread pestilence before the year expired, and Abraham Colmer was elected to fill the chair twice made vacant within the limit of a single municipal year.

this nation of England and Scotland, aboue three hundred sayle of shippes wth their Lading & Merchaundize, besides the Captiving of many hundreds of his Ma^{te} said subiects, to the vtter Ruyne of themselues their wifes & children, not onlie to the ympouerishing & weakening of this his Realmes, but to the ymbasing & dishonoring of the whole nation. In regard whereof, they humblie prayed some speedie course might be taken for suppressing of those pyratts, to the securitie of the peti^coners from farther spoyls hereafter, His Ma^{te} in his heighnes wisdome, apprehending the dangerous consequence thereof, & tending aboue all to the preserva^con of the goods, liberties, & liues, of his subiects, did seriouslie recom^{end} the said peti^con, to the Considera^con of the Lords of his Councell, whoe for the publique & waightie respect thereof, did both willinglie entertaine, & carefully look into the meaines how to giue satisfac^con in that behalfe, And therevpon did by waye of preparay^con cause a conference to be had wth the merchaunts of London, where I was likewise required to be, (having alsoe complayned of the Miferies these parts hath enduered in that kind,) at w^{ch} tyme after a leardg dispute, and geⁿall resolu^con by all of the necessitie of the service there was a free and cheerefull offer made, by the Merchaunts & owners belonging to the said Cyttie of London, of ffortie thousand pownds, to be Leavyed towards the advancement of the meaines, whereby to free the feas of those publique enimyes of Com^{on} Co^merce, And Co^mission giuen vnto me, to deale wth the merchaunts, owners, and others of these parts (whose losses hath byn noe wayes inferiour to any one part of the Realme, that hath vsed these feas) that amongst them there

may be some such competent furtherance afforded, as standeth wth the necessitie of the service, yo^r own saftie, and the publique good of the Comon wealthe, In w^{ch} I cannot be pswaded that there is any honest or well affected to eyther, that will be unwilling to add what lieth in his power. But for that I ame speedily to make retorne, of the successe of my pceedings in this service, & because I haue appointed certaine of the princypall Merchaunts out of other partes, to meete me at Eton this next Sessions, about the same cause, I ame to praie & likewise by virtue of the said authority to requir yo^w to call vnto yo^w these of yo^r Towne, to whome yo^w may ympart the Contence thereof, & receyving their resolucons what they will willingly doe, towards the advancement of soe worthey & so necessarye a service, (retorne me their aunswere) assuring my selfe there will be no lesse furtherance giuen from the well affected of this place, then from any other of noe greater meaines whatsoever, and what resteth more for me to doe, to the further satisfaccon of yo^w all, I will be ready to performe, to the uttermost of my power, as he that will for ever rest,

Yo^r verie loving friend /

FARD: GORGES.

April the 19: 1617

End: To the worl^l my very louing friend M^r Robert Trelawny, Mayor of the Towne of Plymouth, these.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. XCII. No. 92.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

RIGHT HO^{RBL}E According vnto your Lo^{ips} directions of the 4th of Aprill, I haue had Conference with the Merchaunts & owners

owners of shippes of this Countie, conferning the ouverture made for the suppressing of the Turkish pirats of Aigeere and Tunis, who after diuers metings and feuerall deliberacōns, weere still perplexed with the dificultie of the busines, who cannot be perswaded, that a smale fleete ymployed from hence, (as they are of opinion is intended) can by any meaines effect ought worthey the greatest of the charge it will amount vnto, besids they find themselues much afflected of euery side, both for that they are contynewally robbed and spoyled by those sea rouers, and thrust out of all trade, in a manner by the Londoners, whome they are fory to see, that after soe many incrochements upon the rest of the subiects, and soe greate an Infinit treasures gotten into their posseſſions, togeather with the commerce and trade of the whole world, they should resolute to aduance this soe noble and soe worthey a designe, but with forty thousand pownds, a proportion very ſhort (of what they Conceiue becomes them in ſuch a caſe to haue done/ neyther is it the leſt greife that hath afflected them, that at the ſame Instant, that ſome of the Townes weere in deliberacion with themſelues, how they might ſatisfie your lo^{ips} expectaſons, They underſtoode of a letter that was ſent from S^r William Garewaye,⁶²⁴ to the Customers, forbidding any entrey to be taken of cotten wolls, cotten yarne, galls, and many other Coſmodities, vſually brought out of the Straits, by any that weere not of the leuant Company, w^{ch} hath wouderfully diſcouraged thoſe of the better ſort, from medling any more in busines of that

⁶²⁴ Sir William Garroway, or, as frequently ſpelled, Garway, belonged to a family conſpicuous in English annals. He was knighted by King James at Theobalds, July 19th, 1615.

that kind, and it is noe smale amazement to the whole multitude that hath made any profiet that waye, the owners not knoweing how to ymploy their shippes, nor the merchaunts what retornes to make, for the fish that they did vse to send into those places aunswearable to their aduentures, of those things the humblie desire that yo^r lo^{ips} will be pleased to take notice, & to vouchsafe yo^r ho^{rble} fauours for their present releife therein.

And as for the clearing of the seas of those comon enimes they likewise desire that yo^r lo^{ips} may be pleased to understand, that there are noe Subjects more willing to aduance it with their best meaines then they are, but yet they are of opinion, (vnder correction) that there is noe foe fayre a way to accomplish it, as to prohibite the merchaunts from all manner of trade with the Turcks, and to call home the Leger⁶²⁵ that is there, wth their seruants, and factors, wherefoeuer sited in those parts, and foe to resolute to make the warr by sea or land, as occation shall serue, in this case the hopes are foe many, and the waye foe plaine, as they are assured, his Ma^{tie} shall find the Merchaunts and owners of these parts, noe waies inferior to any of their condition, throughout the whole kingdome, and this currant (may it please yo^r lo^{ips}) howsoeuer propounded by the Merchaunts, is in common opinion foe applauded (as if it fort with yo^r lo^{ips} more grauer wifdoms) and that it may by yo^r goodnes be aduanced, there is noe question but there are many in this County, that will presently ymploy the greatest part of their fortunes vpon these aduentures, vpon other conditions
they

⁶²⁵ The resident ambassador.

they cannot be perswaded vnto any thing by any meaines, yt is true it becometh not any here to direct yo^r wisdomes that are there, yet it is my duety fully to relate what I haue receiued in this kind, and to leaue the successe to gods prouidence, and yo^r lo^{ips} fauourable accepta \tilde{n} ons, vnto whome I ame in duety bound to rest in all seruice,

Yo^r lo^{ips} most humbly to be Comauanded /

FARD: GORGES.

from PLYMOUTH, the 16. July 1617.

End: To the right ho^{rble}: the Lords, of his Ma^{ties} most ho^{rble} priuy Councell, at ye Courte theise . . . August 1617 A letter from S^r Fardinando Gorges to the lordes, / Concerninge the busines of suppeffinge the Pyratts of Argier and Tunis.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. CV. No. 140. I.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE EARL OF BATH.

MY MOST HONO^{BLE} LO^r: The generall rumors of forraine preparations requirs me in the discharge of my duetie, humbly to recommend vnto your lo^{ips} honorable considera \tilde{n} on, the many decayes and defects that along peace and want of ordinary reparations hath made in this his Ma^{te}: forte and Iland neere Plym^{outh}, as well as the weaknes of our guards, being farr unable to withstand the desigues of soe great pouers, in respect whereof I most humbly besech your good lo^{ip} to be pleased to consider how necessary it is, some present course should be taken for the reperation and supply thereof with all expedition, by the ayde and meaines of the countrey, vntill such tyme as their lo^{ips} to whome I haue formerly

formerly written in that behalfe shall giue directions how it may be done, with out the farther troble of yo^r lo^{ip} or the countrey, And the things that I presently desire of your lo^{ip} is a hundred pynars or labourers for the repayring the breaches and ruyns of the Iland especyally: and one hundred musketers to make good the defences, and if it be possible prouisions for the buyldings of lodgings, stoore-howfes, and courtes of gardes, both for them and such other nombers as the necessity of the seruice shall occasion to be sent thether, and this busines being of the greatest consequence of any other in these partes, I doubt not but that yo^r lo^{ip} will vouchsafe the expediting thereof, for preuention of those euills that may ensewe the neglect, and therefore seasing farther to troble your lo^{ip} herein, I rest in all seruice,

Yo^r lo^{ip}s most humbly to be comauanded /

FARD: GORGES.

from PLYMOUTH the 22th of February 1618.

End: To the right ho^{ble} my very good lo: the Earle of Bath, or, lo: Liueteynant of the Countye of Deuon these. 22 Feb: 1618. From S^r Fardinando Gorges touching the repayring of the Castle neere Plymouth.

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES ET AL. TO ROBERT TRELAWNY.

M^r MAYOR vpon a refference of a peti^con preferred to S^r Richard Hutton Knight,⁶²⁶ one of his Ma^{ts} Justices of Affise, by

⁶²⁶ Sir Richard Hutton was one of the Justices of the King's Bench. He was an excellent lawyer, and a man of inflexible character, which won for him the title of "The honest judge." He was extremely modest, and so averse to having his virtues paraded in public, that he particularly requested that no sermon should be preached at his funeral.

by a poore man of your Towne Charles Keddewe wee haue had conference with M^r Barons whome wee did conceiue the busines did in some fort conferne, and vnderstand by him that the Towne standeth ingaged by theire words to discharge him of all demaunds of the faid petioner, for so the mayor and others promised vpon the conclusion of those controuersies betweene the said M^r Barons and them, (as he affirmeth) In Considera^{con} whereof, you may be pleased to take it to yo^r farther examina^{con}, and to see amongst your felues how it may be concluded wthout more troble than needes must to eyther partie, wherein we doubt not, but you will haue acharable respect to the distressed estate of the poore plaintife, that is not farther able to contest then by peti^{con}, the w^{ch} we referr to yo^r good affection, and so eyther to returne vs yo^r aunswere or otherwise to conclude it, according to equitie amongst you, w^{ch} wee leaue to yo^r best liking, and so rest

Yo^r very louing friends /

FARD: GORGES.

Ry: EDGCUMBE.⁶²⁷

7ber y^e xth 1619.

End : To the right w^{orl} M^r Nicholas Sherwill,⁶²⁸ Mayor of the Towne of Plymouth, these.

(State

⁶²⁷ Sir Richard Edgecombe, of Mount Edgecombe, near Plymouth, was interested in the colonial schemes of Gorges, and one of the charter members of the Council. Though a man of great influence, he appears to have held aloof from all political complications, and so

avoided the dangerous waters which engulfed so many of his friends. He died March 23d, 1638.

⁶²⁸ Nicholas Sherwell succeeded Colmer as Mayor of Plymouth in 1628. He had filled the chair in 1618, and in 1637 was again re-elected.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. CXXIII. No. 101.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CALVERT.

RIGHT Ho^{BLE} Yt was my chance to be at my lo: of Bath wth the Barnestable men about our affaires of Newe England when the lords letters came unto my hands, so as I could not returne any aunswere before I came backe, that I might examyne those perticulers that I fownd necessary to giue your ho: satisfac^{con} in, And I do acknowledge my selfe much bound to your ho: for your fauoure in giuing me cause thereby the better to discharge my dutie, for by it I haue taken occasion to looke into the affaers of france, wth a more diligent respect then otherwise I should haue done, although your ho: may be pleased to remember that heretofore yt seemed unto me there was cause enough to suspect the worse, but I was growne fearefull to agrauate any thing in that kind, les^s being a man of warr yt might be thought I was willing rather to put the world in combustion, then that there was reason to beleive my suggestions. But now to satisfie your ho: for the shipps that are under the Com^{and} of the Baron de Couldrey, they are belonging to the duke de Neueres⁶²⁹ (as he faith) and weere prepared to goe against the Turks, but haue bin this two moneths in the pay and seruice of the french king. they weere furnished and set out of New haven, where they tooke in 12. peices of Cannon, wth their carriages, and prouision for land seruices, As also 8000. musketts, of Cosletts and piks great store, one hundred

⁶²⁹ Charles de Gonzague, Duc de Nevers, made Duke of Mantua in 1627. He died September 22d, 1637.

hundred tunne of powder, fortie tune of match, 50: thousand waight of bullets, wth great quantitie of spades and pikeaxes, wth basketts and other necessaries for pinars.⁶³⁰ And therewas in the whole fleete as some reporte 250: Irish souldiers, whereof one Company was ymbarked in this shipp wth their Cap^t and officers, whose names I haue here wth sent, togeather wth the names of the most eminent persons amongst them, as I could conveniently come to the knowldg of them; And it seemes to be confidently beleiued, that as sone as the french king hath brought vnder his subjeiction those of Rochell, dismantled the other Townes of defence, and disarmed all those of the religion, they will convert their forces to the farther aduancement (as the terme it) of the Catholik cause, and subuersion of the Turks; Yt is a faire Couller I confess, but it is to be doubted euery thing Considered that there are some euill Instrum^{ts} amongst them, who to serue their owne ends, seeks vnder that banner to renewe the Auncyent quarrell betweene these nasioms of England and france, so much the soner for that they feare what will be the success of the happy vnion of both our nasioms vpon all futer occasions that may arise, for prevenzion whereof they may haue reason to laye hold of the present oportunitie, seing the kings Ma^{tie} likly to be ingaged so many other wayse, and at this present so meainely prouided to make oposion, and finding in the kingdome of Ireland so many discontents ready to break out vpon the leſt hope of seconds, but yet, it may be the coles may be kindled first, by ſome particulers, ſuch as is the Duke of Neueres, or ſome ymployed vnder his name for other designes that ſhalbe directed to

rune

rune the hazard of the attempt, if it succede as they desire, they will not be to seeke of Cullarable causes to Justifye their doeings, howsoeuer they can but render what they shall get, and that not before they can kepe it any longer; but in the meaine tyme the misery will be great that will follow the making of warr after a long peace, with an vndisciplined army vnfurnished and unprouided of all things necessary for those services. But of these perticulers I dare not presume to say any more vntill farther occasion presents it selfe, only I wish the worst may speedely be preuented, by furnishing the places of defence vpon all his heighnes Coasts, arming of the Subjects and suplying his stoores, things of no great charge if it be done in tyme, if deferred, it may happen to come to late, or peraduenture not to be gotten for money, yt hath alwayes bin taken to be a principall parte of wisdome to provide in peace for warr, and now wee see all our neighbours about vs in armes, some offenfue, some defensiuē, if those wee take at this present to be our frinds should be defeyted, how is it possible but that wee should beleue the victorious Cap^t will perseue his fortunes euen vpon the frinds of his enimies, And so not seise vntill he hath made all before him willing to receiue the law at his hands, but I assure my selfe their lo^{ps} are so prouident and so full of knowledg what belongs vnto these things, as they will not omitt any tyme or oportunity to do what so waighty a busines requires, only I humbly crave pardon, if I haue presumed to wade farther then becomes me in this subject, Euen so Comyutting yo^r ho^s to gods holy protection I euer rest in all service /

Your ho^rs humble to be Comauanded /

As

As I had Concluded this letter, I vnder stooде that one of the Squadran belonging to the Baron de Couldrey, that went from hence the 3th of this Instant, being shippes of 500: tūne, (and had in her 400: mariners and souldiers) is lately put into falmouth, although they haue had the wind fayre, to haue gone when they had pleased.

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH the 11th of Nouember 1621.

End. To the right ho^{ble} S^t George Caluert knight principall secretary to the kings most excellent Mat^e at y^e Court theise. 1621. S^t Fardinando Gorges to M^r Secr: Caluert.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, James I., Vol. CLIX. No. 22.)

SIR F. GORGES TO BUCKINGHAM.⁶³¹

MAYE IT PLEASE YOUR GRACE Fearing that I cannot obteyne soe speedy a recourse to your Graces presence, as I conceyve, were convenient both for the dischardg of my dutie, and your Graces satisfacⁿtion, I haue presumed in theise fewe lines to let your Grace to knowe, that I haue latelie receyved seuerall advertisments of a generall Staye that is made in Spaine of all sortes of Shippes, and a greate and extraordinaⁿarye preparaⁿon for a navall attempt, wherein is to be
imbarked

⁶³¹ George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, was one of the most elegant and dissolute men of his age. His personal beauty, it is said, was the caufe of his wonderful influence with James, who gave him the familiar title of Stenny, the diminutive of Stephen. The course of reasoning which led to this appellation is worthy the addled brain of the British Solomon, who, quoting Acts vi. 15,

where it is said that the Council, looking steadfastly at Stephen, "saw his face as it had been the face of an angel," declared that Buckingham's face appeared like the face of an angel to him, and put him in mind of this passage in Holy Writ. He certainly possessed no other likenesfs to the martyr. He fell by the hand of Felton, an enthusiast, August 23d. 1628.

imbarked extraordinarie numbers of lande forces with munition, ordināce Armes, and other provisions fitt for a Royall Inuasion. And althoughe it be knowne to euery man of meane Judgment, that he hath cause sufficient to asemble his best forces, to withstand and make good, the severall occasions he hath in hande, both upon his owne Coast, and otheres his Territoryes more remote: yet when we shall call to our confideraçons, the present state of ours and his affayers, the disgustes that is taken of either parte, the doubtes he conceyves of our present resoluçons to be righted of the wronges receyved and the disadavantages he must suffer by making himselfe a defendant that knowes his owne weaknes in y^t kinde, and whoe hath for prevençon thereof endevored by all meanes, to continewe himselfe an assailante, as well knowinge the difference betweene the one and the other, together with the observaçon that is made of the factions and parties he hath raised both in Ireland and England, whoe within theise fewe yeares are growne to that hedd in every quarter that they are not onelye become insolent and vn-sufferable to particulars, but most daungerous to the publique peace of theis Realmes, and therefore it is undoubtedly conceyved that there is a presente purpose in him to imbroile some of his Ma^{ties} Realmes, if a tymely course be not taken for a spedie prevention thereof And althoughe I acknowledge it to be my dutie from tyme to tyme to advertise your Grace of theise and the like occurrantes as they shall happen to fall out: yet I haue forborne to be two forward in this kinde fearinge leste I might be thoughte rather toe desire occasion of trouble, then to endeuor to quench a flaminge fyre. But seeinge (if my Judgment be anye thinge) a most eminent

declaraçon

declaracon of daunger to enfeue I should doubt of myne owne Loyaltie if I did not offer the same to your Graces farther confideracon upon whose shoulders a greate parte of the burden of the goode succeſſe of oꝝ Nation doth preſently depend, and whoe muſt resolute to giue an accompte for the succeſſe thereof as occaſion ſhall require what ought ſpeedelie to be done in this caſe I dare not preſume to aduife leſt it miſt be thought I were more forwarde then diſcreet, ſpecially for that I haue not had the happienes to be ſoe well knownen to your Grace as to others that hath helde the ſame Helme that is nowe in yoꝝ preſent handes; whoe hath oft tymes, required my ſervice in matters of this naſure as well as did her late Maꝝie whoe ſometymes thought my opinion not vnworthye to be harkened unto. Onely this I hope I maye without offence conclude. That as the kinge of Spaine aſembles his beſt forces and makes his greateſt proviſions be it for defence or offence: Soe we haue noe leſſe reſon then Soloman had in tyme of peace, to prepare for warr, but wee are ſoe farr from Solomans prouidence in this kinde as that our Fortes and defences are not onely in rewen but indeed without all meanes of defence upon the leaſte occaſion or attempt much leſſe againeſt a Royall invadinge Armye. Nay my good Lorde I protest that theye are in ſoe base and unworthye a manner provided for, as for myne owne parte I ame not onelye aſhamed of that in my chardge but greiued to the harte to thiſke that I ſhoulde liue to ſee it ſoe, which in diſchardge of my dutie I haue preſumed to acquaint your Grace whoe (as Captaine Generall of all of that kinde) maye the better knowe how fitt it weare that preſent order maye be giuen for ſpeedie redreſſe.

To

To whose wisdome I humbly refer the farther consideraçon of all, and with like humilitie craue pardon for my present presumption if I haue strayed beyonde the boundes of good manners, or presumed more uppon your pacience then I had cause. Yet if this may finde a fauorable acceptation it shal be an incouragment to me to make tender of my best endevors in a more free manner hereafter, and binde me for euer to rest

Your Graces humblie to be comauanded in all dutifull service /

FERD: GORGES.

LONDON this viijth of Feb: 1623.

End: For his Maties speciall seruice. To his excellent Lord the Duke of Buckingham his Grace Lord highe Admirall of England at the Court giue theise with speede. S: Ferd: Gorge touching preparations in Spaine. 1623.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

S^r I haue a desire to haue Captaine Gilles goe Captaine of my Shipp in the imployment shee is nowe vpon, but Consideringe wth my Selfe the manie occasions that there is to make vse of men of experience and valour I thought it my dutie, first of all humbly to acquainte my Lord Duke's grace therewth to whom it speciallie belongs to receaue notes of matters of that Nature, and first to receaue his graces allowance therein as allsoe his fauorable Comyssion for his better Warrant boeth for the comauand of the Companey and Discharge of his dutie accordinge to the Articcles agreed vpon, and

and for that I knowe your opportunytie and acceſſe to his Grace to be more easie then myne, I am bould to desire yo^r fauour and helpe for the obtayneinge his Graces pleasure herein and I will hould it as a ſpeciall fauour from you amonget others formemerly receaued, and euer ref in what I am

Yo^r affuſed ffrend to ferue you: FARD: GORGES.

From aboard the Neptune this: 4: of Maie: 1625:

Add: To my much honored ffrend S^r John Cooke knight one of the M^{rs} of re-
quests to his moſt excellent Ma^{tie} give theſe / End: by Sir J. Coke. 1625
May 4 S^r Ferdinand Gorges To haue Cap^t Giles co^mand his Shipp.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. II. No. 86.)

SIR F. GORGES TO CONWAY.⁶³²

MAYE ITT PLEASE yo^r Lo^p: I perceauē the French Embaffador, hath receaued ſtrange informa^cons, of many defects and wants I ſhould haue contrary to my Covenaⁿts, and agreement made wth hym; And ſeeing he hath complayned as much unto his Ma^{tie} and to the Lords, I wiſhe that there were an Invoyce taken by Comiſſion directed from their Lo^ps wherby the truth maye the better appeere, as well for the diſcharge of my reputa^con, as the fattiſfa^con of the lo^p: Embaffador

⁶³² Sir Edward Conway was the ſon of Sir John Conway, and was one of the many knights created by Eſſex for military achievements. He commanded a regiment at the facking of Cadiz in 1596, and it was his diſtinguished ſervices on that occaſion which won for him the honor of knighthood. He ſub-ſequently ſerved in the Netherlaſds,

and was Governor of the Brill. On the accession of James, he ſought civil em-ployment, and became one of the prin-cipal Secretaries of State in 1622. He was retained in office by Charles I., who advanced him to the peerage of England and Ireland, under the titles of Viſcount Conway and Killultagh. He died in 1630.

Embassador Itt is true, that in attempting to come downe wth more haste then good speed, she was twice grounded, and was by so much tyme hyndered, after that she brake two of her boughe Anchors, and was forced to staye the repayring of them, since w^{ch} she hath attended nothing butt the oppertunity of wynde, w^{ch} itt seemes his Lo^p thincks rather my fault then Gods providence Thus much I thought itt my duty to give yo^r lo^p a taste of before my coming upp, w^{ch} shalbe wthout delaye So I rest in all duty

Yo^r lo^{ps} humble servant to be comaunderd/

FERD: GORGES.

From aboard the Neptune belowe GRAUESEND: 23^d Maij 1625.

End: To the right Honoble my much honored Lord, the Lord Connawaye, principall Secretary to his Most excellent Ma^{tie} att the Court give these. May 23. 1625. A l^{re} to M^t Secre Conway from S^t Fer: Gorge touching the French Amb^t

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. IV. No. 37.)

SIR F. GORGES, &C. TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

RIGHT HONORABLE: For that wee haue maney reasons to suspecte, there was a resolucon in some principall officers of Sea: men: of his most Christian Ma^{tie} ⁶³³ to dispossesse us of o^r shippes and goods, and soe to make themselues masters of them and us, contrary to the condic^tons concluded upon, by our Charter part; and for that wee are uncertayne how far forth that designe might haue trenched into the lynes & safties of our felues and o^r people; Or other wayes haue touched upon the duties & alegence wee owe unto o^r Soueraigne Lord the Kinges most excellent

⁶³³ Louis XIII. of France.

lent Ma^{tie} to whom the principall care & interest doth most
belonge:/ wee haue thought it fitt in the ciuillest maner wee
could for the p̄sent to quite the coast of France and in the
meane while humbly to desire yo^r Hono^r that some such
course maye be taken for o^r farther securityes as should bee
thought fitt in his Ma^{ties} royall wisdome, for wee see it is not
sufficient for us to haue anie m̄chants tyed for the pformance
of anie thinge Concluded upon, betweene the seate of
a Souaigne Ma^{tie} & that of simple subiects, in as much
as wee pceauie already the m̄chants that were undertakers
for o^r security, were prohibited, from disbursinge o^r wages
due unto us (but at their pills), if soe, then what hope
remaines for us that wee shalbe fairely delt wthall, when all is
in their handes, and wee turned ouer to be suiteres for o^r re-
compence of damages, In reward of o^r great Charge & losse
sustayned, and under Correction, wee cannot but marvell they
should desire to put aney such extraordinary nombers of
theirs aboard us, as they haue offered when they hyer us as
men of warr, But that they doe ether suspecte our valore,
our fidelities, or Abilities, to pforme anie thinge to be re-
quired of us, if soe, Then this is not the way to giue them
their ends, they ayme at, for from suspected persons, or per-
sons under guard, they must looke for nothinge ells, but
practises continually arysinge thorowe Jelousies or misinter-
pretacons of all actions or accidents that shall happen Es-
pecially when it is betweene Nations of feuerall language
and feuerall Religion, (such as wee are) and therefore to
prevent all euills of this kinde, (under favor) wee conceaue
it much better that they should giue us leaue, To serue them
wth o^r owne forces, And soe to subiect o^r felues onely to the
Comandes

Comandes & direcc̄ons of such their Admiralls or Generalls as shalbe asigned to haue the Charge of the service, as heretofore was accustomed when wee served them in anie their warrs, if then, anie omission or fault were Comitted by us or aney of us, lett the offend̄ suffer Condingly for it, accordinge to the Lawes and Customes of all Nations, soe shall they be free from givinge us cause of offence, & wee from excuse, (if wee pforme not ō duties, Ether accordinge to ō Covenants, or accordinge to the lawes, and orders wee submitt ōselues to obay when wee shall be joyned to the rest of the Fleete or to be devided into a Squadron by ōselues at the Generalls pleasure, but howe soeuer there wilbe noe thinge more looked for by us, then that wee maye be made (in some fort) acquainted wth the Enemy against whom wee are to bee ymployed, That wee may make ō provisions accordingly, both in respecte of the coaste wee are to keepe, and the meanes wee are to use offensive or deffensiuē, As well as for the health & comfort of ō people, And to take order for supplies duringe the tymes of our ymployments, under his most Christian Ma^{tie}, And for sufficient provisions for our home comeinge, when wee shalbe discharged from thence, all wth wee referre to yo^r lo^{pp} more graue and serious considerāon and euer rest:

Yo^r lo^{pp} in all humble Seruice to be Comanded:

FERD: GORGES.

PETER WHITE.

ANTHONY TUTCHEN.

JESPER DARE.

dated this 11th of July 1625.

End: To the Right Hon^{ble} our verye good Lord the Lord Conway principall Secretary to the kinges most excellent Ma^{tie} / 11th of July 1625. Captaines of shippes (lent to the Christian King) to the lord Conway alleadging many reasons not to bee exposed to the command of the French as by them is intended. (State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. IV. No. 107.)

DECLARATION OF SIR F. GORGES, &C.

WEE y^e Owners & Captaines of y^e Englishe ships hired for y^e service of his most Chriān Ma^{tie} are come hither in obedience to o^r Soūaigne lo: y^e king, whose pleasure it is wee should give all content unto his most Xpiān Ma^{tie}; w^{ch} wee most humbly have & doe obey; but we hope it is conceaved that as we are Owners & masters of o^r owne Goods, soe it will not be thought unlawfull or unfitting that we make o^r owne reasonable Conditions before we depart wth them, as alsoe that we free o^rselves from those questions & troubles we are now in.

First therefore wee desire to be freed from thos Advantages may be taken against us by reason of y^e protest published ag^t us by the Marquis d'effiat⁶³⁴ Ambdo^r extraordinary for his said Chriān Ma^{tie} & that to be donne imediately & wthout more delay that we may the better & more securely treate uppon what is else to followe for y^e satisfacon of both kinges. Next that wee may have p^{esent} security for y^e safe deleūy of o^r Shipps to us againe, & satisfacon for o^r enterteynmt, & y^e security wee p^{esently} demand (if his most Xtiān Ma^{tie} intend to be put into possession of o^r Shipps) is mon[nie]

⁶³⁴ Antoine Coffier de Ruzé, Marquis d'Effiat, was born in 1581. He was ambassador to the Court of James, and played an important rôle in the negotiations which led to the marriage of

Henrietta of France with Charles I. For his valuable services to the French crown he was created a marshal of France. He died at Lorraine, July 27th, 1632.

mon[nie] to be deposited in y^e Chamber of London wthout Revocaōn, ptraōcon or other impedim^t, & that we may still receave it as it shall grow due: [for what] wee doe, for that y^e form^m security of Merchants stands us in noe stede, because wee have found by experience there is stopp made of o^r pay, & we know not how to right o^rselves in it.

Lastly for that y^e shippes of Engl: are understood by o^r state to be y^e fortresses & publique defence of that kingdome, & that y^e deliūy of them into y^e hands of any forreine prince or State concernes not lesse y^e lives of y^e deliūers, then if they should render any other place of publique defence put into their hands: wee most humbly desire for o^r freedomes & securityes in that behaulf, we may have full & ample warraunt & authority under y^e broade Seale of England for our full dischardge, as alsoe that we may be freed from Bonds wee stand bound in for y^e not alienating of any o^r Ordnānce, & that we may not be questioned for y^e same by any lawe alredy made, or to be made hereafter. And further if it be demaunded why we are more Cautious now more then att o^r first drawing of o^r Articls, wee aunswere, because these Articles were drawne by Coōmission^{rs}, & these are to be donne by o^r im̄mediat selves, the first being wholly broken.

And for that we desire there be noe further delay or ptraōcon of tyme on o^r ptes, wee whose names are hereunto subscribed have thought fitt to entreate o^r worthy & beloved freind Basset Cole gen^t in o^r behaulf & for us to p̄sent this above written to y^e R^t ho^u y^e Marquis d'effiat And wee give further unto y^e said Basset Cole full power & authority to
treate

treate upon the Conclusion of all y^e said former Articles:
In [witness whereof we] hereunto sett o^r hands/

FERD: GORGES.⁶³⁵

ANTH: TUTCHEN.
JAMS MAYER.
HEN: JURER.
THO: HARIES.
JASP: DRID.
JOHN HARIES for myself
& pet: WHITE.

Cap^{ts} & Masters.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. IV. No. 88.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE KING.

Most GRATIOUS SOUERAIGNE: Seeinge the French Embassadour hath broken the former contractes made wth us for the inployments of our Shipps, and that hee hath soe far forth prevailed wth yo^r Ma^{tie} that they are agayne to returne to Deepe, where hee pmiffeth to giue all content for our further satisfa^ccon, I shall humbly desire that it will please your Ma^{tie} I maye haue leau to goe thither in my owne Shipp, the better to conclude for what I conceaue to be fitt in hono^r and Justice, and that I may giue such secondes to the rest of the Captaines and Owners as they desire to re-
ceauue

⁶³⁵ It will be noticed that up to a certain point the abbreviation *Fard.* appears in the signatures of these letters, and then, uniformly, *Ferd.* At first I was disposed to make them uniform; but upon a careful examination of nearly all of the earlier signatures, the letter

a appeared unmistakable, while in the later signatures the letter *e* was equally plain; indicating that Sir Ferdinando at a certain period deliberately adopted the more modern form of spelling his Christian name.

ceau from mee, wherein it maie bee I shall haue the oppertunitye to doe your Ma^{tie} that service that becomes mee to pforme, and be a meanes to prevent the euills that other waies maie infue the losse of such an occasion and wthall that yo^r Ma^{tie} wilbe pleased gratioufly to giue order to my lord Treasurer that I maie receaue my owne meanes, wthout more delayes, to pvent the starvinge of yo^r Ma^{ties} seruice, and the ruin of my selfe and my owne fortunes, for all w^{ch} I will for euer rest in all humblenes

Yo^r Ma^{ties} most dutifull and most obedient Servant /

FERD: GORGES.

Written this 19th of July: 1625.

End: Julie 19. 1625. S^r Ferdinand Gorges to his Ma^{tie} / To haue leaue to goe wth his owne shipp, and the rest over to Diepe /

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. IV. No. 89.)

SIR F. GORGES TO BUCKINGHAM.

MAY IT PLEASE YO^R GRACE: Seeinge the shipps are againe to returne for Deepe, I humbly desire to goe thither my selfe that I may see the concluſion of their pmiffes, for our satisfaſcons that are intereffed in it, I haue written to the same effecte unto his Ma^{tie}, and shall humbly desire yo^r Grace to favor mee soe much as to giue secondes thereunto, it is possible I shalbe able to giue content soe much the better to yo^r Graces desires, w^{ch} I finde to be full of hono^r and worth; if I faile in anie thinge, it shall be want of power not zeall to bring it to passe and as foone as I returne I will attend yo^r Grace

Grace at Plimouth, and be ready wth all I haue to approue
my selfe /

Yo^r Graces humblest servant / FERD: GORGES.

Written this 19th of July: 1625.

End: To his most Excellent Lord the Duke of Buckingham his Grace: Julie 19.
1625. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges to my lo Duke To haue leaue to goe wth the
shippes to Diepe.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. IV. No. 138.)

NICHOLAS TO SIR F. GORGES AND THE MASTERS OF THE
MERCHANTMEN.

Aboarde the good shipp ye Neptune
this 28th of July: 1625: ST: ANGL:

I AM sent hither by my lo^d & master y^e Duke of Bucking-
ham (Lo: highe Admi^{tt} of England) to see y^e execu^{con} &
pformaunce of his Ma^{ts} pleasure (signifyed by l^{re} from my
lo: Conwey:) And doe crave yo^r direct Aunsweare in
wrighting under yo^r hands, whether yo^u will (according to
my lo: Conweys l^{re}, & upon the Caution & Security w^{ch}
was agreed on & parafaited att Rochester by the three lo^{ds}
Ambdo^{rs} of Fraunce & by them delind to my lord who
co^mmitted it to me as y^e security I was to take) deliver ouⁿ yo^r
shippes to be disposed of by y^e most Chri^{an} king or noe: If
yo^u will pforme this, I shalbe reddy to make knowne yo^r
obedience, & will pcure yo^u a sufficient dischardge to yo^r
Contentm^t/

EDW: NICHOLAS.⁶³⁶
For

⁶³⁶ Sir Edward Nicholas was the eldest son of John Nicholas of Wiltshire, and was born April 4th, 1593. By diligence and perseverance he rose from a Chancery clerkship to be Principal Secretary of State and Privy Councillor. He died September 1st, 1669.

For absolute answere to the demands aboue written wee say that wee haue a desire to giue all content & satisfactio in this buysines to his most Xſtiā Ma^{tie} & the Marquis d'Effiat his Ma^{ties} Amb: in obedience to the coſmands receaved frō our ſoveraigne & our L: Admirall: but for the ſecurity (w^{ch} wee never agreed unto) tendered unto us & parefaited by the three Amb^{rs} of France⁶³⁷ at Rocheſter (albeit wee acknowledge it to bee very honorable & worthy there greatnes) yet under correctiō wee holde it not competent & ſafe for us to accept thereof & therfore doe abſolutely refufe to deliver our ſhips on the ſame: But doe humbly pray if it bee intended by the L. Amb: that our ſhips ſhould ſerve his most Xſtiā Ma^{stie} that ſuch cautiō may bee given us as may ſort wth the quality of Merchands to deale in: that is to ſay to haue ſecurity given us by ſufficient Merchands at Paris to bee transferred to Londō irrevocable & ſuch as may not bee protected by the prerogative or authority of the Princes of any ſtate whatſoever for w^{ch} wee moſt humbly deſire a declaratiō under the hands & ſeales of both Kings.

FERD: GORGES.

ANTHONY TUTCHEN.

JAMES MOYER.

HENRY JEWHEY.

THOMAS DAUIS.

JESPER DARE.

JOHN DAVIES.

Dated in the roade at DEEPE this 28th of July 1625.

End: 28^o Julij 1625. S^t Angl: lrē to y^e Capt^e & M^{rs} of the 7. mchaunts ſhipps & their Absolute aunſwerre. (State

⁶³⁷ Namely, the Marquis d'Effiat, Duc de Chevreufe, and M. Villeaucleres.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. V. No. 3.)

SIR F. GORGES TO NICHOLAS.

S^r I shall desire you to remember my Service to my lo: Embassado^r and to giue hym to understand, that I haue nowe noe more power to pfwade these people to staye heere any longer, For they finde the stormes like to come in, And the roade to be exceeding dangerous, wheruppon they conclude a necessity of their depture for the coasts of England, where wee purpose to attend his Excellencye's further pleasure and comaunds. For my pticular I will doe the best I can to recouer Portsmouth, as the most convenient place, (as the tyme nowe is) to send and heare from the Court, and to dis patche thofe busnies, that you knowe is necessarily to be dispatched.

You maye further giue his Excellency to understand that I am exceeding sorry, things so fall out, that itt is nott in my power to returne his respects unto me for the honor he hath done mee in my lady Marquise⁶³⁸ coming aboard, and for sending his two younge Jewells to me yesterdaye, wth his kinde and noble invitem^{ts} For all wth he shall as furedly finde I will continue to rest his humble servant, I praye you to remember my service unto my lady Marquise, wth many thancks to her hono^r, for her noble fauor, And as I expect shortly to returne agayne, so I will nott fayle (under her fauo^r) humbly to kisse her hands ashoare /

Thus

⁶³⁸ The wife of the Marquis d'Effiat.

Thus wth my loue remembred unto yo^rself I will continue
and rest

Yo^r assured loving Frend / FERD: GORGES.

From aboard the great Neptune in the rode of DEEPE the First of August
1625.

End: A Monsieur / Monsieur Nicholas gent Angois Secretaire de Mon Seign^r
le Duc de Buckingā Grand Amiral d'Angleterres / Laifer ces letres au logis
de Monseign^r le Marquis d'Effiat Amb: Extraordinaire pour le Roy tres
christiene au Roy de la Grand Bretagne / A Diepe / R. 2^o August. 1625. S^r
Ferd: Gorges a moy de dire qu'il ne pourroit demeurer du ceste rude plus long
temps sans hazard/

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. V. No. 18.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

MY LORD. I doubt nott, butt his Ma^{tie} will receaue sharpe
informa^çons agaynst mee from the Marquesse de Fi^tat, as if I
had been a violent Enimye to the affayres of his Master;
But (S^r) you shall finde the truth to be; I stood for the
Honor of my Nation, and the safety, and proffitt of myselfe
being engaged in that ymployment a matter of tenne or
eleuen thowsand pownds, a portion too great to be hazarded
wthout just reason or sound consideration, att the least when
itt came to myne owne share to capitulate for myself, as att
the p^ſent itt did; For nowe I was att th' Ambaffado^rs de-
ſire, and his Ma^{ts}: comaund to resigne my ſhippe, and her
provisions wholy to the poſſeſſion of the French, uppon a
newe agreement, the firſt contract (made by the Comiſſion-
ers) being voyde; And uppon this ground I propounded
ſuch conditions for myſelf, and the Merchaunts then p^ſent,
as were conceaued to be reaſonable, (namely) That we
would

would be freed from the advantages, he p̄tended agaynst us, by reason of his protest; And that wee might be secured for the safe deliery of our Shipps unto us agayne, and duely fatisfied our entertainement for their imployments; lastly, That we might haue sufficient warrant from his Ma^{tie} for putting our shippes into the hands of Strangers, w^{ch} we knowe to be a matter of noe meane conſequence; And howſoever reasonable theſe condiſons were thought to bee, Yett his lo^p ſeemed to take itt ſomethinge tenderly, conceaving that he had ſufficiently determined all thoſe things att Rochester, where there was ſome conſerences betweene the three Embaffado^{rs}, and two of the Maſters of the ſhippes, att what tyme their lo^{ps} offered their owne ſecurityes, w^{ch} althoſh itt was Hono^{ble} and becominge their greatnes, yett was itt nott receaued by the Maſters (as they ſolemnelly protest) as fitt for the quallityes of merchants to accept of, yett agayne his lo^p required to be punctually fatisfyed, whither we would ſtand to itt or nott; To the w^{ch} we as playnely anſwered, That althouſe wee eſteemed itt to be very hono^{ble} yett nott competent for men of our quallityes to deale wth butt if he pleaſed to giue us ſecurity by Merchants in Paris, to be transferred from them to Merchants in London reſponſible, itt ſhould fatisfy us for that perteſuler, butt we likewiſe expeſted the accomplishment^t of the reſt of our Articles, or othe‐riſe wee could proceſſe noe further; Butt after many debatements att the laſt, his lo^p ſeemed to approue of the reaſonablenes of our demaunds, And gaue me to understand by my Coffen Cole (whom I haue wholy imployed in this
busines

busines and nowe send to yo^r lo^p wth the rest of the pticulers more att large) that he had sent them to Paris, and looked for a speedy answere ; So wee attended in expectation therof, In the meane while, Captⁿ Pennington ⁶³⁹ returned wth order from his Ma^{tie} for his deliuery of the Vantguard and her furniture into the hands of the Embassado^r, wth like order to hym to cause the Merchants to doe as much, Whereat being extraordinarily pplexed for the p^ſent and finding that the Embassado^r thought by that opportunity to be Master of my goods in dispighte of mee, and to accompt for the same att his owne will, and having itt in his power to take all advantages agaynst mee, (being now in posſeſſion of my shippe) that the quilletts of lawe would giue hym, by reason of the former protest, and assuring myself, itt could by noe meanes stand wth his Ma^{ts} royall purpose, to ruyne his owne Subje^cts to pleasure strangers, As also conceaving a warrant directed to Captⁿ Penington onely, to be noe sufficient discharge for me, if after I should be questioned legally in myne owne Countrey ; I resolued to putt myself to his Ma^{ts} mercye, for detayning my shippe, notwthstanding Captⁿ Peningtons order in that behalf, Unleſſe, the Embassado^r gaue mee the security formerly pro- pounded, w^{ch} he refused to do ; And theruppon, I tooke the opportunity to sett fayle, giving his lo^p to understand

(before

⁶³⁹ Sir John Pennington has been extolled for piety, opennes, and generosity ; and accused of hypocrisy, treachery, and selfishness. His servile submifſion to Buckingham, whose tool he appears to have been on the disgraceful surrend^r of the English ships in 1625, as related elsewhere, certainly casts a stain

upon his character. He became governor and captain of Sandorn Castle, in Kent, and Vice-Admiral, and but for the opposition of Parliament on account of his supposed loyalty to the King, would have been made Lord High Admiral. He died, September, 1646.

(before this occasion fell out) that there was a necessity for me to goe to the Coasts of England wth my Shippe, that rode being unsafe to her to ryde, wherin we had suffered a desperate storne, wth much perrill for eight and Forty howers together; And that if these articles were accepted, the shippe should be alwayes readye to attend his lo^{ps} comounds, the w^{ch} I am still willing to accomplish;

Now my good lord if in any thinge thus done by mee, I haue omitted what in duty or discretion I was bound to doe, I humbly craue pardon of his most royall Ma^{tie} to whose mercye and grace, I submitt myself, my life, and goods, to be disposed of according to his gratiouse pleasure; And for the mayntenance of whose hono^r and happinies, I will att all tymes readily render the same, And of thus much, I shall humbly desire yo^r lo^p will acquaynt his sacred Ma^{tie} in my behalf; And vouchsafe me that noble fauor, as to use yo^r best meanes to excuse my errors, And for that, as for many other yo^r hono^{ble} cares taken of me and myne, I will for euer rest,

Yo^r lo^{ps} humble servant /

FERD: GORGES.

From aboard the great Neptune off of BEACHY ⁶⁴⁰ the 5th of August 1625.

End : To the right Hono^{ble} my very good lord, the lord Connawaye principall Secretary of State, att the Court giue these. 5. August. 1625. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to the lo^{:C} Conway / Givinge a particular accompt of the reas ons wherefore hee deliuered not up his shipp into the hands of the French miniters they refusinge to giue him fittinge securitie. (State

⁶⁴⁰ Beechy Head, on the south coast of England. This was the first land Sir Ferdinando had made after escaping from the French coast, and he evidently

stopped here to dispatch these letters to the Court by his trusted kinsman, Basset Cole, who belonged to a family of high standing and influence in Devonshire.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. V. No. 19.)

SIR F. GORGES TO BUCKINGHAM.

MAYE ITT PLEASE yo^r GRACE. I haue endeuored what laye in my power to obserue yo^r Excellencyes comaunds, and was pfwaded that I had brought things to reaonable heads, both for myself and the rest of the merchants, in that wee infisted upon three propositions; The first to bee free from the Embassado^{rs} protest; Secondly to haue security for the redeliuery of our Shipps & fatisfaction of o^r paye; And lastly, to haue sufficient warrant from o^r Souaigne lord the Kinge, for putting our Shipps into the hands of Strangers; the Marquesse to this replyed he would nott budge a tittle from the contract made att Rochester, betwixt the three Embassado^{rs} and two of the Marchants, w^{ch} contract the Merchants disclayme, And neuer gaue (they faye) their consent unto, w^{ch} appeeres by their nott signing to that the three Embassado^{rs} putt to their marcke; And ther uppon although wee (att the rode in Deepe) acknowledged the security of Rochester very hono^{ble} yett humbly refused itt and chose rather the security of merchants, as best futing wth o^r rancks and quallityes, Butt the Marquesse entering into further treatyes wth us, att last demaunded the Valuation of our shipps, and thought o^r ppositions so reaonable, that he pretended to us he had sent them to Paris, to receaue their answere, butt being thus in expectacon of what wee were to heare from the French Court, His Ma^{ts}: shippe the Vantguard came to us wth a warrant from his Ma^{tie} to render her selfe

selfe and us to the hands of the Marquesse, that itt seemed most strange to us all, butt pticulerly to myselfe who haue my whole estate in my shipp, befydes three thowfand pownds I stand indebted for; So that I choose to putt myself rather upon my most gratiouſ ſouaignes pitty and mercye both for my estate and life, then to giue itt unto Strangers wthout any ſatisfaction either to my estate or creditt, And itt will ſtand more wth the kings Hono^r, and my owne pticuler ſafety in future tymes (as I conceave) that his Ma^{tie} make this an act of his owne, and take my ſhipp into his owne poſſeſſion, either to be ſent by his Ma^{tie} where the French deſireth, or els to be receaued by the French heere in England att the Port where ſhee lyeth, Therefore Sir, my moſt humble Sute unto yo^r Grace is, that if I haue done otherwife then becoſed mee in this buſines, you would be pleaſed to interpret itt an error in my understanding nott in my affeconſ and mediate to his Ma^{tie} to ſhewe unto hym, that I thincke I canott better diſpoſe of my goods, then to traſferre them wholy to his Ma^{ts} diſpoſall; w^{ch} I humbly leauē to yo^r Graces moſt ſerious conſideration, to whom I deſire to approue myſelf in all humillity and Service

Yo^r Grace's moſt reſpectiue ſervant /

FERD: GORGES.

From aboard the great Neptune off of BEACHY the 5th of August 1625.

End: To his moſt excellent lord, the Duke of Buckingham his Grace lord Highe Admirall of England att the Court giue theſe/ 5th Aug: 1625. S^r Ferd: Gorges conding his refuſall to ſ' ve y^e French wth his ſhipp.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. V. No. 69.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

RIGHT HO: I shall entreat your Lo^p to doe mee the favour to giue mee your L^{ps} warrant, for the Master of my Ship & some of his mates to come before your Lo^p to answere to such matters, as for there severall mutinies & disorders by them comitted I haue to object against them, as also the suspicio I conceave of there practizes to runne away wth my ship, & that therfore I shall further entreat your Lo^{ps} favour, that I may haue the helpe of some of the Kings ships, men to bring myne into the harbour, because synce my coming hither most of my men are ether sicke or prest away & I lye in danger (if a storme should come) heere in the rode, & I shall allwaies bee bound to rest.

Your lo^{ps} humble servant/ FERD: GORGES.

Fro aboard the great Neptune in Stokes Bay, August 23, 1625.

End: To the right ho: my very good Lord the Lord Conway principall Secretary to his most excellent Ma^{stie} 23. August 1625. Adm^r S^r Ferdinando Gorges. For a Warraunt for the Mr &c of his shipp to bee called to answere their mutinies, And that hee may haue assistance to bringe his shipp into the Harbo^r.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. VIII. No. 71.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

MAY YT PLEASE YO^R LO^{PPS} Yt was the last of October before I receiued yo^r l^{ps} Commaund for the setting forth of my Shipp, by reasoun of my being in the North part of the

the Countie, about some busines that Conserned me extraordinary, but I presumed that shee had bin long before that at the Rendevoes, shee was assignd unto by my lo: Dukes order, what the cause is of her staye any where I knowe not, but the better to giue satisfaccon to yo: lo:ps I haue sent along the coast of purpose to find her out, & to take order shee spend noe tyme in vayne, in the performance of yo: pleasures, wth speciall directions to the Captaine to take notice of all that pass by him, and to informe himselfe what he can of any course held by the enimy, and thereof to giue adver- tisment as cause shall require, eyther to yo: lo:ps, my selfe, or any the deputy lyveteynnts upon the coast next adjoyning to the place where he shall be, that thereby his Ma:js forces may haue the more tyme to be in a readines to wthstand any attempt that shalbe offered upon the sudden, althoughe I assure my selfe that yo: lo:ps hath already giuen geñall di- rections in that case, yet fearing he might faile of the receipt thereof, I haue presumed under yo: lo:ps fauors to supplye any such accident, by this prefent oportunity, be- ing the speediest meaines I could lay hold of. Even soe humbly Coñyting yo: lo:ps to Gods holy protection I rest.

Yo: lo:ps in all duetyfull service / FERD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH, y^e last of October 1625.

As I past thorough the Countrey I was carefull to in- forme my selfe what stoores of powder and match there was in store upon any occasion, and I find (to my hearts greife) that there is litle or none, neyther doe they knowe where to gett yt, for money; May yt therefore please yo: lo:ps to be

a meaines eyther that the lyveteynaunts, may provide yt as they can for the present supply, or to cause some good quentyte to be sent downe out of his Ma^{ts} stoores, and the countrey shall returne present money for yt.

End: To the right ho^{ble} the lords of his Ma^{ts} most ho^{ble} privy Councell, a Court / theise / Octob^r the last. A l^re from S^r Ferd: Gorge touching his Shipp and the want of powder.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

SIR: I haue sent my Cosen Cole on purpose to sollicite the reparation of the decayes of this place and to followe such other busines as concearnes his Ma^{ts} seruice as well as my owne p^ticular, wherein I doe especially presume vpon your hono^{rs} favour who hath bin an eye witnes in what shamefull state wee stand in, and in whome there is wisdome and Judgment to seconde the reforma^{con} of soe behayfull a busines, and I haue especially required him to addresse himselfe to your honor on all occasions as to a person I most rely vpon.

As yet I haue heard nothinge from our fleet but I doubt not (by gods favor) of their well doinge, for that euill neuer would haue flowed by the way, that good feldome comes.

For my owne part I dare not stirre farr from my charge vntill I heare what is become of the Dunkerks, or howe the forces at Lisborne are disposed of. As for the busines of my Shipp as heretofore I haue said, soe I must say stille, I leaue to
your

your honnor to doe for mee as for your selfe, assuringe my selfe you will take to yo^r Considera^{con} howe manie other ym-
ploym^{ts} there are to be hadd for the present of extraordinary
proffitt for a Shipp of her force.

As for the busines of ffraunce I thinke it will proue in the conclusion as heretofore I alwaies conceaued it would, but I durst not be ouer bould to censure things of that nature, especially obseruinge the waies that were taken by w^{ch} they brought their busines to pass, but at the first their open pretences were against Monsieur Soubiza and his brother: Nowe they are willinge to make peace wth all, saue those of Rochell: when indeed their principall ayme was for manie yeares before to cut of the root of the religion by defetinge them of that hould, w^{ch} they would accomplish (at howe deare a rate soeuer they bought it) and it is noe evill way in my opinion to Judge of the first intent of things by the continuall prosecu^{con} of them, but (Sir) you are both of wisdome and place fitt to take knowledge of matters of this nature and I am the boulder wth you for that I haue had soe good prooef of your vertue and worthie care of anie thinge that soe highly concearnes the estate of our owne happines to whome I leaue the farder consideration hereof, and soe will rest in all seruice :

Your honno^{rs} humbly to bee Commanded /

FARD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH the: 26. of November 1625.

Add: To the right hono^{ble} Sir John Cooke knight, principall Secretary to the Kings most excellent Ma^{tie} at Court these. End: 1625 Novēb 1626 S^r Ferdi: Gorges from Plimouth.

(Coke

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

NOBLE SIR I perceauue by yours of the 13th of this instant, that you haue receaued information, that some of the Captaines of Mounseir De Soubiza, haue a resolution to attempt the fetching away of the S^t John by force out of falme-mouth, the trueth whereof I haue examined wth some strictnes, & find as there was noe reason wherefore they should offer anie such thinge, soe there was nothinge lesse intended by them, onely it is true that doubtinge what Mounseir De Martey, the French kings Viceadmirall might attempt vpon for they come to mee & desired that I would doe them that favor, to write to Captaine Bonithon,⁶⁴¹ that hee would be a meanes that they might bringe her peaceablely from thence, to whome for theire satisfaction, I was bould to wishe him to obserue them in their desires as far forth as hee could, if hee had not anie order to the contrarie. alledginge wthall that I conceaued it could not be anie waies disagreeable to the integrity of his Ma^{ts} iust care of all due respects to be had, that psons of foraigne States in league wth his Ma^{tie} should receaue equall ptection wthin his portes, soe it was thought fit, that where suspition was had of evill intents that they might be soe drawn vnder Comands where the ministres of Justice might haue power to order them soe, as was fitinge the honor of the State, Herevpon they questioned mee, that incase shee were permitted to come away, & that

Mounseir

⁶⁴¹ This is without doubt Captain the founders of Saco, and who is con-
Richard Bonython, afterwards one of spicuous in the early history of Maine.

Mounseir De Mantey did notwithstandinge perfue her, whether it might not be allowed too them to meet them at Sea, wth . 4 . or . 5 . Shipps to assure free passage, To w^{ch} I replyed I knew not but that it was agreeable to the lawes of nature, and Nations, for eurye Creature to defend himselfe, & to protect his life & goods, by his best meanes, yet wished them to vnderstand more from mee before they proceeded farther in that busines, Conceauinge that vpon the deprtture of the Hollanders out of the ffrenche seruice, (from whence they were called by the Prince of Orange, & the States of the vnted provinces on payne of deathe, & to make their Randeuouz before Dunkerke) That Mounseir De Mantey would also leaue that place, & then they might bringe her about wthout more adoe, & this I conceaue was the grownd of the advertisement your honor receaued, but vpon anie such occasion hereafter, I humbly beseech your honor to rest assured that I will not soe much suffer my assercion to blind my Judgment, as that I will knowingly permitt the Kings Hono^r to suffer in the least condicōn that maie be, yet I humbly thanke your Honor for yo^r noble care, and will not faile henceforth not onely to indeav^r to preuent anie such thinge, But to impeach what I maie, euen the Cause of suspition, and I shalbe wonderfull glad if here be anie thinge in my power that might be seruiceable to his Ma^{tie}, or yeeld exception to their Lo^{ps} But I am sorey that things haue soe sorted in this last ymployment, that I haue no Joye to be more large in the relation of their succeffe, my trust is, the next wilbe better, and if my seruice may be exceptable I presume I shalbe able to showe the waie of layinge a faire foundation for the erectinge of a glorious buildinge
nether

nether doe I Court anie such thinge for glories sake, or other respect then the desire I haue of my Countries happiness, and the honor of my Kinge, and nation, even soe restinge:

Yo^r Honno^{rs} humbly to serue you / FERD: GORGES.

ffrom his ma^{ts} ffort by PLYMOUTH this 22th of December 1625.

Add: for his Ma^{ties} Speciall Seruice To the right Hono^{ble} S^r John Cooke knight principall Secretary to his most excellent Mat^{ie} at the Court these hast hast post hast End: by Sir J. Coke. 1625 Deceeb 22 S^r Ferd Gorges frō Plimouth.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

S^r: I vnderstand that the late m^r of my Shipp Andrew Batton whom for his mutiny and dishonesty to mee when I was aboard myselfe I put out of her, hath abused yo^r hono^r and the rest of the Comission^{rs}, and contrary to my order entermeddled wth the pay of the Marrino^{rs} and the officers to the wronginge both of them and mee, and therefore I shall desire you to take notice of it, and to be pleased vpon informa^çon of the pticulers thereof to pceed therein, as in Justice you shall thinke it fitt, I haue appointed the Captaine to repayre vnto your hono^r about it, as alsoe my Cosen Cole and I knowe not how m^r Burlemack hath pceeded wth mee in that busines for that I heare my Purser is dead, and there is none of his accounts come to my handes, but in ffraunce I did acknowledge to haue receaued all that was due vnto mee for . 6 . monethes entertaynement, for

for shipp victualls & my mens wages, & gaue my discharge to Burlemack for receipt thereof, and I hope hee hath accordingly pformed it, if not hee hath deceaued my expectation, beyond my oppinion of his worth. But if hee hath made his word good there resteth somethinge towards the refurnishinge of her, for the better inableinge of her for his ma^{ties} seruice againe. Yet of these pticulers I forbear to trouble your honno^r; as knowinge the multitude of busynesse that you are troubled wth at this p^{sent}. The state of all things here you will vnderstand by our Generalls letters, as for those things that concarnes mee not, I knowe you heare from others, but I feare you will find maney errors hath bin Comitted, that will need of beinge prevented hereafter, And it becomes not mee to accuse or excuse I will indeauo^r to doe my dutie where I haue to doe, and If I may be heard I will not doubt but that many of these may be avoyded hereafter, and your honno^r must knowe this muche, for that it is fitt you should seeke how to helpe it, that there is a generall discomfort conceaued vpon the euill Carrage of this ymploym^t but where the fault is you best knowe, and I hope it wilbe a warninge to vs hereafter, and teach vs to rest assured that wthout fit instruments it is a hard matter to pforme anie excellent worke. I will trouble you noe farther, but that I will euer rest:

Yo^r Honno^{rs} humbly to serue you / FERD: GORGES.

ffrom his ma^{ts} ffort by PLYMOUTH this 27 of December 1625.

Add: To the Right Hon^{ble} S^r John Cooke knight principall secretary to his most excellent Mat^{ie} at Court: these End: by Sir J. Coke. 1625 Dec^r 24
S^r Ferdinand Gorges from Plimouth.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XX. No. 31.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

RIGHT HO^{BLE}: Here is lately arrived a hollander that came out of the East indias, I remember some yeeres since before the death of our late Ma^{tie}, there was order for the staying of any of them that should come out of those parts. Now for that I know not how things haue bin since accorded betweene our merchants of the east Indies & theirs, And for that I perceiue there hath bin many treaties & mutyall respects betweene his Ma^{tie} & the States of those parts, I should be louth to doe any thing that I might giue occasion of distast or exceptions, and therefore haue forborne for the present to execute the tend^r of the former warrant, untill I might receyue farther dyrections in that behalfe: Humbly praying yo^r lo^{ps} that you will be pleased I may understand at full his Ma^{tie} or my lo: Admyralls farther pleasure therein that soe my accons and the publicke service may mutyally agree in on, I haue herewth written to the Gouerno^r of the east indian company to the same effect, & doe intend to forbeare to express any thing to the Comaunders of the Shipp, untill I heare that they are upon point of depture, soe that I defyre they should not knowe of any ympediment intended them, but upon necessity; soe referring to your wisdome the farther Considera^ron hereof I humbly rest

Yo^r l^{ps} seruaunt to be Comaunderd / FERD : GORGES.PLYMOUTH the 5th of Feb: 1625.To the right ho^{ble} my very good lord, the lo: Conway, principall secretary to his Most excellent Ma^{tie} at Court these. 5. Febr. 1625. S^r Ferdinand Gorges

to

to the lo: Conway. That a hollander, come from the East indies, w^{ch} he hath staied there, according to the warr^t he had in K. James his tyme to that purpose, & desireth to know his Mat^e & my Lo: Admiralls pleasure what he shall doe.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONNO^R It is certaine, I vnderstand that the Hollanders haue quite the busines of Portrego, having onely sacked & demolished the Towne but could not take the Castle, for that being themselues weake and in want of all necessaries they were forced to leave it to their possessions againe, and I pceauie it to be (as you say) the tymes are possessed wth other Ingagments, but if I durst speake what I knowe, I would say wee are posseſſed wth a desire to doe well by other wayes, but you will finde that to haue bin the best way, were it followed in tyme, and what you that are at the helme will doe, wee that are foremaſt men know not, yet ſure wee are, our feare is you ſteare not the right course of harbouring the Shipp in ſafty, for wee obſerue enemies round about vs, ffraunce & Spayne vpon the poynt of confederating how to bring their ends to paſſe vpon vs, howſoeuer you there may be otherwaies pſwaded of the imposſibility thereof, how the Archduches armes, & prepares, you cannot but haue heard at large, to preuent all w^{ch} would require a Councell of the greatest Statesmen & the greatest Captaines of the Nation. And when I come to ſpeake of the Captaines I forrowe to thinke howe poorely the Kinge is furnished at this pſent, the rather for that I find hee pſumes onely on thoſe bred in the dull warrs of the Low-

Countries, where their actions are flowe, as is their Courses in all their pceedings. Their Armies furnished w'h all things that can possibly be thought on, fit for their manno: of ympleym^t, w'h differs asmuch from the warrs to be made to the Southwards, as is possible, & in w'h the Captaines wilbe as farr to seeke as those that neuer sawe the warr. Besides what Captaine is there of our Nation at this p̄sent euer gaue his minde to vnderstand what belongs to the affaires of the Seas, and if any man vndertake that busines, and not beaten in Knowledge of it, hee shalbe assured to loose his owne Honnor, & to bring to distruiction the publique affaires, vpon this ground I partly founded my opinion of the succeſſe of our late & miserable attempt, before they went from hence, and therefore did my best to haue prevented the worſt, if my councell could haue bin harkened vnto, but I ſee that what God will haue, man cannot w'h-ſtand; but to ſatisfie your honnor in a word, of the true causes of our late ſcorne (for what I can heare) it was, firſt, the many wants of neceſſaries fit for ſuch attempts as they vndertooke.

Secondly the want of knowledge & vnderſtanding that ought to be in Cheefes fit for ſuch deſignes; Thirdly the frownes of Spirritts w'h occaſioned the ptraction of tyme, that a dilligent and nimble Capt euer assures him ſelfe of before hand, as the weapon of the greateſt aduantage & fitteſt to incounter an Enemy w'h; As for yo: pceedings in pliaiment I beſeech God for to vnite the harts of the Kinge, and his people, as that they may both ſee & knowe—the many & many occaſions they haue to indeauor to prevent the ſtorme in tyme that is falling vpon vs, but mee thinks

I behould wth feare a certaine Confusion in all our courses, as if our minds were distracted. And from thence a wonderfull eresolution, & vncertainty what to doe first, wth is thought to pceed from no other thing, then want of experience, how to dispose of matters in tyme of troubles. And in trueth (Sir) to be playne wth you, this is the observation that is made by those of any vnderstanding, and this is that, that discurrageth the Low-Country Captaines, as well as othes of Judgment, and makes proud & insolent our Enemies abroad, togeather wth the late experience they haue had of our ignorant and Cowardly attempt, as they terme it.

Now, (Sir) for the ffrench that are here, they are ready to doe any thing that is feizable for their poore meanes to doe, but I thinke not yet resolued what to attempt, As for the newes of peace in ffraunce soe commonly bruted with vs for my owne part I beleue it not, the rather for that I am soe well acquainted wth those kind of rumors, as alsoe for that I haue lately heard that the Kinge hath sent out of St. Mallowes to ioyne wth his ffleet at Rochell, sixteen sayle of great Shipps besides six sayle of ould Shipps to sincke in the mouth of the Channell, and diuers others out of other parts of his Dominions, for to make good the Seas against Mounseur De Soubiza, whome they heare is to come from hence, wth a very great ffleet. And (Sir) what soeuer you expecte to heare from ffraunce assure yo^rselfe, it shall onely sort to the advanceing of their owne ends, as hath euer bin their practices, neyther are they otherwaies to be dealt wth all than by the sword, if the tyme be fit for it; and yet too farr slowe. This instant is most dangerous too, as for our Shipps that are here it wilbe yet . 5 . or . 6 . six weeks, before they

they Can be fitted to set sayle although I find Captaine Pennington to ymploy a great deale of industry in boſting what is poſſible, but it is one thing to thinke and another thing to doe; Lastly, I hould my ſelfe infinitly beholding vnto you, for your Care and reſpect had of me about my ſhipp, but I muſt earnestly deſire your Honno^r to be pleased to fauor mee ſoe much as to be a meanes that I be not coſened by the diſhonesty of the late maſter, that for his wicked mutiny; and Conſpiracy to runne away wth my ſhipp, had I not bin aboard my ſelfe, I was forced to turne away, whom I heare hath by his ſlye & lewde practice in my abſence gott my mony into his hands, and takes vpon him to diſpoſe thereoſ at his pleaſure, the ptiulars whereoſ I haue Comanded my Coſen Cole to attend yo^r honno^r wth, that I may receyue that Juſtice that you ſhall thinke fitt for him that cannot ſtirr anie waies from his Ma^{ties} feruice, How muſt ſoeuer vnto his owne preiudice. Euen ſoe craving yo^r pardon for my plaine and free dealing, To whome I will euer reſt.

Yo^r Honno^r Seruant to be Comanded / FERD : GORGES.

PLIMOUTH this 15th of february 1625.

Add: To the right Honorable Sr John Coke Knight, principall Secretary to his most Excellent Ma^{tie} at Court theſe. End: by Sir J. Coke. 1625 Feb 15.
Sr Ferdinand Gorges frō Plimouth.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONNOR This incloſed Coming to our hands, wee thought fit to recomend it to your further Conſideraſon, that Conſerring it with the reſt of your intelligence

gence you may doe therein as shall best fort wth the occasion. There is nothing else in these parts that wee have to say worthie your Knowledge, seeing that wee find the most part of the Shipps that are here vnder the Command of Captaine Penington, to be in a manne^r ready to take in their victualls, but of that wee can say nothinge onely we conceaue that the officers assinged for that seruice doe not omitt to certify the particulars of their proceedings therein. Soe resting from beinge farther troublesome, wee dutifullly rest

Yo^r Honnors humble Seruants / FERD: GORGES.

JOHN GROBBELL.

JOHN FOWELL.

PLIMOUTH this 25th of february 1625.

Add: To the right Honoble S^r John Cooke knight, principall Secretary to his most excellent Ma^{tie} at Court these. End: by Sir J. Coke. 1625 Feb. 25
S^r Ferdin. Gorges frō Plimouth.

[The inclosure is a printed titlepage, thus :]

Meditationes | ac | foliloqvia | in Septem Petitiones Ora-
tio|nis Dominicæ. | Authore | R. P. F. Elisæa à S. Michaele|
Carmelita Discalceato. | Sic ergo vos orabitis: Pater Nof-
ter | qui es in cælis. Matth. 6. | Antverpiae | Apud Petrum
& Ioannē Belleros. | ɔIc. Ic. xxxv. |

SIR. F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONNOR I lately advertised my Lord Conway, of an East Indian man that arrived here, and of an order that I had from my Lord Admirall before his late Ma^{ties} discease, for the stay of any of them that should happen to arrive here, wth a desire to his Lo^{pp} that I might vnderstand

vnderstand his Ma^{ties} pleasure, or my Lord Admiralls, what Course I should hould in the execution thereof, for respect of the manie treatise that I vnderstand hath passed betweene State and State since that tyme, since the writting whereof there is another arrived, wth both wth I haue dealt in the fairest Termes I could, so attend the pleasure of the State before their depture againe, who seeme willing therenvto, both in obedience vnto the Command, aswell as the supply of their owne necessities, but it seemes my Lord Conway his occasions are so manie that this busines hath flift his memory, for that I heare nothing from his Lo^p in answere of myne. And therefore I humbly beseech yo^r honno^r to hasten a resolution hereof wth what hast shall seeme fit vnto yo^r wisdome. To whome I rest

Yo^r Honno^{rs} humble Seruant / FERD : GORGES.

from his Ma^{ties} ffort by PLIMOUTH the of ffebruary 1625.

[No address, nor any endorsement. Perhaps sent inclosed in the letter of 15th February, 1625, in which it now remains.] ⁶⁴²

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONNOR: By your Honno^{rs} of the seventh of this instant, itt appeares how carefull you have ben to give accompt to their Lo^{ps} of what hath past from my selfe, and the rest of the Comissioners to your hands of our proceedings here wth fauour as it was agreeable to our ex-
pecta^cons

⁶⁴² A copy of Sir John Coke's reply it are obliterated by age. It shows, to this and the foregoing letter is at however, that Sir John Coke held Gorges Melbourne House, but many portions of in great esteem.

pectacons, soe is your Noble diligence in answereing the same. As for the late Alarum given to mee and the rest of the Comissioners, it was noe sooner conceaued then the meanes was found to prevent itt: Alththough to make the busines the more sure, as in matters of that kinde you knowe (Sir) there is noe delay to be vsed. The Comission^{rs} were assembled and some of them being Deputy Leuitenants wth my selfe there was present order given for some extraordinary Guards to be settled in such places as was found most fitt to entercept any such assemblies or movings as might sort with the intelligence given, and besides that, vpon the day appointed by the contrivers as the intelligence went. I held it my duty to be my selfe on horseback & to assigne certaine of the Comissioners wth others of the Leuitenants to meet mee, where wee might bee ready to give order both to the Captaines & Cheife officers of the Army, as alsoe to the trayned bands to doe what else had bin fitt to haue bin done in that behalfe, soe as wee find that the busines was taken before itt was ripe, & soe quenched with little or noe brute or rumour of any such thinge. How soeuer itt hath wrought an opinion in the most presumptious that it is their best way to attend with more patience for such things, as they are made to knowe is prepared to supply their present necessities wthall, w^{ch} in a word (Sir) is extreame great and in truth sufficient to discontent and afflict excellent mindes. As for Captaine Penington hee hath vsed a great deale of discretion, and with much care to keepe in order the Marrino^{rs} although with much difficulty too, as I presume hee hath from tyme to tyme aduertised when it best became him.

As

As concerning the ffrench Shipps the most of them went from hence some thirteene daies since, forced therevnto for want of all things necessary to hould life and Soule together, a number of them being sicke and weake, & the most part wthout clothes or ought else to helpe them, soe as the peace being made the cheifest of them came vnto mee their Eyes full of teares, & their hearts full of sorrowe, bewailling the miserable condicōn of their ffortune that had lost their patri-monies, and themselues stood as persons proscribed; and for ought they could learne not in the compas of the accord. Howsoeuer they were to retyre home to their wiues & chil-dren, or to perrish here without meanes of releife, but with this protestaçon vnto mee that had vsed my best meanes to detayne them here as longe as possiblē I could, that if occasion presented, or his Ma^{tie} should require it, they would be ready with their bodies, goods, & freinds, to attend either his Ma^{ties} comands or Mounseieur de Soubiza vpon the first summons, soe as now here remaines onely that Shipp that was Mounseieur de Soubiza his owne called the little S^t John, and one other small Barque likewise his Lo^{ps}, and one other small Barque or two that attend the next faire winde, the two belonging to Mounseieur de Soubiza. I haue caused the Captaine & Master to hale ashore wthin the Quaie, for that I feare that some of them in this disaster might carry them away, as they did one other of his Lo^{ps} contrary to the comand they had receiued both from his L^{op} and my selfe att his Lo^{ps} request.

As for the letter it pleased you to write for, I haue none that came to my hand about the same tyme, that purports any matter of consequence. It is true I receiued a letter
about

about the same time by one of East Lowe from a certaine ffrench man, dated about the same tyme you write of, but it came not to my hands vntill the peace was concluded, and contayninge nothing of certaine that I could pceau the knowledge thereof might any waies advantage his Ma^{ties} seruice, I soe much neglected itt as I can by no meanes knowe what became of itt, howsoeuer the same partie that wrote it is better able by this tyme to cleere what soeuer was contayned therein, not easily to be vnderstood if hee be sent vnto to the same purpose, but I heare so much from tyme to tyme as hath made mee bould heretofore to write my opinion of the resolucon of that State to be nothing les than it appeares his Ma^{tie} is pswaded by them itt is, and if my iudgement and intelligence both doe not faile mee, you will find that this peace soe concluded of late (howe disad vantagious) soeuer to the poore Rochellers is of noe farther or longer countenance than vntill they haue disposed the Troops that attended Mounseieur de Soubiza his ffortunes in all these extremities, & wth more ease to aduance their other designes, the better to psecute their enterprises on that place, thereby to accomplish the extirpacon of the Religion out of those parts. And farther itt is to be feared by the Manno^r of their pceedings aswell as by what is bruted vnto mee from all sides, that the combination is certainly concluded, howsoeuer other waies coloured betweene Spaine and ffraunce for the better accomplishing of the same. as alsoe to curbb his Ma^{ties} resolucon of vphoulding the state of Religion, either there or else where, w^{ch} they are assured hee principally aymes att, what other cause of quarrell wth Spaine soeuer is pretended, but your obseruacons of the Councells of ffraunce

and the speciall instruments ymployed in the managing of those affaires will best declare this, for if you find them either Jesuitts or persons Jesuiticall, then you knowe they are wholly Spanish or maliciously inclyned to the State of Religion, and such as will hould eñy Art that may advance the rewin thereof merittorius, but if in this I haue waded farther than becomes mee, I beseech you to pardon mee, & howsoeuer their is noe hurt in doubting the worst & preventing it.

As for the newes of Spaine, it is comon, the great preparatiōn they make out of all his dominions for a Navill expediçōn, althrough I cannott beleive hee can be readie soe soone as is pretended he wilbe, althrough his Ministers vse their best industry to furnish him wth provisions of all sorts, fitt for his occasions by Sea & land, both out of ffraunce, and out of the Hance Townes aswell as in fflaunders and other his owne dominions. But as I receaue any thing of certaine from any ports, I will not faile to trouble your honno^r wth itt althrough I am hart sicke to see o^r felues cast soe farr behind hand in point of honno^r at home and abroad. As alsoe to haue lost soe much tyme and Treasure to soe little purpose, when as had it pleased God wee had begone att the first, at the right end much might haue bin done, and little faid, but itt is too late to call backe what is past and it yet is more then tyme to resolute what is nowe to be done, for if this yeare be lost, things will be done the next wth more difficulty, & soe yeare after yeare, it wilbe harder & harder, as for my propositions I either feare my owne reputatiōn is two weake to win creditt in these times or my countries misfortunes too aparant not to followe what is grounded vpon

vpon knowledge to be most fitt, Howsoeuer my prayers & industry shall not be wanting. And if the Kinge shalbe pleased to give me leave, & a compitent meanes hee shall see that either I will wipe away a great part of our late scornes, or leave my selfe in the attempt, and if I doe not as much as his Ma^{tie} can expect from a Captaine seconde^d wth noe greater meanes, lett mee receiue noe favour att my retorne. But (Noble Sir) I see I am wading farther in this than I conceaue is yet fitt for the present tyme but when you shall please to call mee to a farther accompt, I wilbe ready to attend you wth my best Seruice Vntill when I beseech you to take vnto your farther Considera^{con} these p^{re}pisitions for the better aduanc^mt of his Ma^{ties} seruice.

ffirst howe convenient or inconvenient it may bee for his Ma^{tie} to vse the seruice of Mounseieur de Soubiza as his Generall for his warrs towards the Indies, considering hee is a Prince of his owne blood, a Captaine of reputation abroad, aswell as wth vs, of power to drawe vnto him maney noble Spirrits of his owne followers, and Maney braue Marrino^{rs} to helpe man his ffleett.

Secondly whether that hee being soe put a foot it may not occasion a change of resolu^{con} in the state of ffraunce, to proceed in their attempts against Rochell, knowing him of power to comand the passages for supplies when need shall require.

Lastly how much such an ymployment of him might honno^r the cause and incourage the part of Religion wth I conceave may be done, wthout preiudice of the Honno^r of any other interested in the great ymployments for that it is a perticular ymployment onely to the Indies that hee is to be

be ymployed in, as Mansfield is in other parts. Even soe
comitting you to Gods holy proteccon, I will neuer faile to
reft:

Yo^r Honno^{rs} Seruant to be Comanded / FERD: GORGES.

from his Ma^{ties} ffort by PLYMOUTH this 12th of Aprill : 1626:

Add : To the Honorable and my much honored, S^r John Coke knight principall
Secretary to his most Excellent Ma^{tie} at Court theise. End : by Sir J. Coke.
1626 April 12. Sir Ferdin: Gorges frō Plimouth.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XXVI. No. 85.)

SIR F. GORGES TO NICHOLAS.

S^r I am bould to send you these incloſed⁶⁴³ to be deliūed
according to the direccons, they Concearne the busines of
Captaine Heigham whose wants will nott permitt him
meanes to followe itt himselfe, and his case is much to be
pittyed being an ould Captaine and of extraordinary mer-
ritt, like to be suplanted by an vnworthie fellowe that was
his Leiutenant, althoſh one that was neuer a ſoldier, and
in whome there is noe trueth vallo!, or anie kind of worth, a
Carpenter by trade bred to the practice of Armes in the
Artillery yard, the Comiſſioners haue written to my Lord
Duke howe they haue found the merritts of both ſides upon
due Examinacon, althoſh wth reſpect of modeſty, his Grace
wilbe honored in his aduancing the worthie, and omitting
the vnworthie, I ſhall need to ſay noe more to you ſauſe
only that you wilbe a menes to haſten his Graces pleaſure
herein,

⁶⁴³ This encloſure, bearing the ſigna- ciente interest to be included with his
ture of Gorges, is numbered 85, I., and correspondence.
follows this letter, but is not of ſuffi-

herein, that the kings seruice do not suffer anie longer through this Contention. And I wilbe readie to acknowledge yo^r care therein, and so to rest.

Yo^r assured freind to be Comanded /

FERD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ties} For.. by Plymouth this 12th of Maie : 1626.

End : To my worthey and loving freind M^r Nickolas, secretary to the Duke of Buckingham : theife : R 15^o Maij 1626. S^r Ferd: Gorges to me condign y^e unworthines of M^r Matthewes to be Captaine.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XXVII. No. 8.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

MAY IT PLEASE YO^R LORP. I haue herewth thought itt fitt to send yo^r Lorp. a copie of whatt I haue rec of the western ports, and conceiued itt not vnsafe thereupon to give order unto the Troops neere the Sea coast wthin this County, as well the trayned bands as those of his Ma^{ties} Army to be ready upon the first sound of drume to obserue such farther direccions as they shall receiue vpon other in alegence and what resteth more to be done I humbly referr to yo more graue considera^ron, I haue farther presumed to give the like direccions unto his Ma^{ties} Fleet wthin this harbour that they hould themselues vpon their guards, and if Conveniently they may that they send out some five or Six faile to beat of into the Sea, and Sone to ly out in the Sound, till other

other direccon may come, whereof I thought itt my duty to aduertice yo^r Lorp To whome I euer rest

Yo^r Lorp^s humble seruant / FERD: GORGES.

From his Mat^{ies} Fortt by Plymouth this 16th of May, 1626.

[Enclosure.]

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XXVII. No. 8. I.)

JOHN OSGOOD, MAYOR, & H. MONDY TO THE CONSTABLES
OF S^T. AUSTELL.

MAY the XVth 1626.

WHEREAS wee haue receyued a letter from the Mayor of Trurow, & he from the Mayor of Perin, advertising vs that there are 80: great shippes betwene the lezard & loe, veryly thought to be Spanards, wee haue thought yt fytt in like manner to giue yo^u notice thereof & wee rest

Yo^r loving frinds /

JO: OSGOOD, *Mayor.*
HUGH MONDY.

Yo^u may doe well to giue notice of this to Plymouth.

Add : To the Constables of S^t Austle, & from thens to the Constables of Foye, haft haft post, for his Mae^s service. Treque by 9 in the morning May 15. Att Foye this present Tuesday 5 of the Clock. haft for life. vera Copia ex. p cur. Ferd: Gorges. End : for his Ma^ts especiall seruice : To the right hono^rble my very good Lord the Lord Conway principall secretary to the Kings most excellente Mat^e att Courtt theise : haft haft haft haft haft haft post haft. Ferd: Gorges. frō his Ma^ts Fortt by Plymouth 16th of May 1626. 12 att night : R_o att plimouth the 17th att to in morning. R_o at Aishberton at eight in the morning the 17th of May 1626. Sherborne at 9 in the morninge the 18th of May 1626. At Shafbre the xvijth of May at j at none . . . Staynes at past one a clok afornone. Rec att Charing Crosse london the 20th att 8. in the morning. May 20th S^t Ferdinand Gorges Advertisment of Spanish shippes discovered upon the Coast / Orders given thereupon.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XXVII. No. 55.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY COKE.⁶⁴⁴

HONORABLE SIR. The Captaines that are assignd to keepe the coast after the departure of the Fleet, haue made their complaint unto mee of their great want of men for the better defence of their shippes upon any occasion, for whose supplies (seeing all our sea faring men are exasted, and the Country glened so neere as they are) I haue thought it most agreeable to his Ma^{ties} seruice to furnishe them wth 70. or 80. Musquetteers out of those companies next adjoyning to this place as well for that itt will faue to his Ma^{tie} so much pay as so maney saylo^{rs} would haue had, as allso for that itt wilbe a good meanes to keepe them from Idlenes, and inable them so much the better for future seruice, but because I haue noe expresse order for my doing in this case, I haue bin bould to adūtice their Lor^{ps} of itt, and wth all humbly to desire their fauourable interpretaōns of my honest intent, and honorable allowance for my doing therein att the least so far forth as they shall approue thereof, whose answeres thereunto I beseech yo^r honnor to afford mee, wth as much conveniensy as is possible; that thereby I may bee assured my zeale to his Ma^{ties} seruice may noe way bee prejudicall to my selfe.

The

⁶⁴⁴ Sir John Coke was the seconde son of Sir Richard Coke, of Trusley, Derbyshire, and was a man noted for probity and ability. He was first Secretary of the Navy, and later Master of Requests, from which latter office he was promoted, shortly after the accession of Charles I., to be one of the Secretaries of

State, which office he held for a period of fourteen years, when, being of advanced age, he retired to Melbourne House, where he died in September, 1644.

The letters in this volume entitled "Coke MSS." are still to be seen at Melbourne House, where they have remained since the time of Sir John.

The mutinous clamors of the Soldiers and murmuring of the Country people are soe largely sett forth by the Commission^{rs} letters to their Lo^{rps} as I shall not need to make repitition thereof to your honno^r at this present, onely I will say this much that I haue waried my selfe wth care and trauell and knowe not more what to doe having patched out tyme as long as it is possible, and if helpe come not the sooner all will breake out into extremities wherein their cases will require rather pitty then punnism^t I assure my selfe of yo^r fauour and am out of doubt of your care howe to helpe all therefore I will euer rest

Yo^r humble seruant to bee Comanded / FERD: GORGES.

from his Ma^{ties} Fortt by PLYMOUTH this 24th of May: 1626.

End: To the right honorable S^r John Coke knight principall secretary to his most excellent Ma^{tie} att Courtt: theise: May 24. 1626. S^r Ferdinando Gorges to Mr^r Secr: Cooke.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXX. No. 34.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY COKE.

S^r Havinge given yo^r honno^r to understand the genall defects of this place, I haue Considered howe something might be supplied without his Ma^{ties} charge w^{ch} I thought fitt to tender unto yo^r honno^{rs} further Considera^ron.

First for the strengthening of the guards finding howe much the Countrie is defectiue of Sarjeants Corporalls, Lans-presadoes⁶⁴⁵ and some principall leaders of files as well

as

⁶⁴⁵ Equivalent to "lance-corporals."

as of Captaines Liuetenants, and Ensignes, that ought not to be ignorant of their duties when necessity shall require theire present ymployment.

Itt may please his Ma^{tie} and theire Lo^{ps} to giue order unto the Lord Liutenant that there be choise made of three principall souldiers young and of quicke spirritts out of euery hundred of the trayned bandes to be sent unto mee unto Plymouth to be disposed of as I shall thinke fitt for theire exercisces and instrucc^{ons} in th execu^{on} of theire seⁿall duties according to theire seⁿall places to be assignd them in theire bandes, togeather with six Captaines, six Liuetenants, and six Ensignes, out of the six regiments that is to say one Captaine out of eⁿiye Regiment and one Liutenant, and one Ensigne and two Sarjeants out of euery Regement the souldiers to remaine here three weekes the Captaines & others the Officers, as it shalbe thought fitt in discretion and soe to be dismissed and others to be sent to supplie theire places untill the expera^{on} of the tyme, and at th end of three weekes those souldiers to be dismift, and other three out of eⁿiye hundred to be sent to releue them, and so eⁿiye three weekes for three monethes togeather wth will Conclude the summer, and giue both good life and assurance to the place as well as Comfortt and hart to the Countrie specially if choise be made of such of the trayned bandes as are best able to beare theire owne charge, whiles they are here.

For that I understand there remaines yet in this towne some small quantity of powder, match, and shott, as also some three or fowre Carrages for ordnance, there Lo^{ps} may be pleased to giue order it maie be deliuered to mee or

my Officers to be ymployed for the p̄sent supplie of the place, some Wheeles I am forced to cause to be made here for to mount some of the Ordnance that are unmounted, the rest that is to be done for reparaçon of the decaies should likewise bee done out of hand, if order were giuen for some monies or creditt wherewth to satisfie the poore workemen, w^{ch} is soe necessarie to be speedily finished, as it principally Concernes both the safety of the place, and honno^r of his Ma^{tie}. Itt being a defence soe notable to all that passe the feas, and indeed a scorne not to be fitted as itt ought to be. This much I thought fitt to bee added to my Former tre, that yo^r honno^r might receaue informaçon of my Conceipt, and with all to assure you I will euer bee thankefull to you for your fauor^r done mee & allwaies rest

Yo^r honno^rs to doe you seruice /

FERD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ties} Fortt by PLYMOUTH. this 5. of July. 1627.

End : To the right honorable S^r John Coke knight principall Secretary to his most Excellent Ma^{tie} at Courtt giue theise. 1627—July 5. S^r Ferd: Gorges frō Plimouth. Wthout his M^{ts} charge. To renforce the guard at the castle wth 1 cap. 1 lieu. 1 Ensign & 2 Serg: out of euerie of the 6 Regiments & 3 hable soldiers out of euerie companie of the trained bands. Their to stay at Plimouth 3 weeks: & to bee relieved wth like nūbers frō 3 weeks to 3 weeks for 3 moneths. Munition to bee supplied frō the town.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXX. No. 33.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY COKE.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONNOUR: Since my last Coming into theise ptes, I haue indeavoured by what meanes I might best

best be able to settle the estate of this Countrye, to make head against anie suddaine incursion or invasion, that the enemies might make upon it. To which purpose, I haue past through it three tymes, once to giue order for erecting of the defences along the Sea-coast, and twice for the viewing of the Trayned Bandes of horfe and Foote. And for the first (if things might be accomplished as it is ordered) I doubt not but his Ma^{tie} and theire Lo^{ps} will find there hath bin noe defect in my indeavo^{rs}. But I pceauie there is an expe^cta^con of the Countrie, that his Ma^{tie} wilbe pleased soe much to favour them, as to aide them with some twelue or Fourteene Peeces of Ordnance Demiculvering and Sacre, the rest of the charge either for guarding of them, or inclosing and erecting of the defences about the places where they are to be mounted. I hope they will be pswaded to doe what else is to be done, the rather through his Ma^{ties} and theire Lo^{ps} orders, directed to the Lord Liuetenant to that purpose, and for the trayned bandes I wilbe bould to say, that I thinke for the infantry his Ma^{tie} hath not manie better for the number of them in his Dominions, the horfe are not yet as I wishe they were, and some defects there are in the Armes of the Foote, but there is promisse made of a speedie repara^con, and care shalbe taken it shall not be forflowed,⁶⁴⁶ but I shall humblie desire yo^r honno^r (in theire behalves) that you wilbe pleased to second theire Peti^cons to his Ma^{tie} and theire Lo^{ps}, For if they may be had I haue soe ordered it, as there shall neither Pirate, or other Enemy ride neere

⁶⁴⁶ That is, delayed. The word was used frequently by the best writers of Sir Ferdinando's time.

neere the Coast, but they shalbe under Comand. And in my opinion it were not amisse they were incouraged by theire Lo^{ps} letters to prosecute theire good affe~~c~~cons. And I must be humbly bould to remember yo^r honno^r howe defectiue his Ma^{ties} Fortt and Iland are, that are under my charge, as well in respect of the decayes of the defences, as allso the want of Ordnance, Muni~~c~~on, and other p^uisions, fitt for a place of that consequence that it is of, and it is nowe more then fouer yeares, since the retourne of the Commissioners sent into theise ptes, who then gaue in a pticular in what case they found it, and what they conceaued would be the charge for reparation thereof, since which tyme nothing hath bin done, but all things haue bin the more subject to decaie and rewin, soe as there is neither Portt nor drawe bridge, but must bee newe made, as I doubt not but his Ma^{tie} yo^r selfe, and some of theire Lo^{ps} may well remember the estate thereof since his Royall psons being here, soe that if ought should happen through the defects thereof, I must humbly pray that the fault may lye where it is, and not on mee, that can but ad~~u~~tice and sue for what is fitt; And further I humbly beseech yo^r honno^r to thinke howe convenient itt were, course were taken for the strengthening of our ordinary Guardes, considering howe that wee must nowe expect that the French will ourly be practiceing howe they may be quittance with us for anie afront or damage wee shall offer them, and whome wee daiely see to make great p^uisions to defend theire owne Coast, as well as howe to inable themselues with shippes, and other vessells to p^usecute theire desig~~n~~es on us, which I doubt not but your honno^r hath daiely notice of, and therefore I will forbear to be fur-
ther

ther troublesome in that kind. Onelie I humbly beseech yo^r honno^r to be a meanes to hasten the speedie determining to put in order theise things, as well for the satisfac^ron of the expecta^ron of the subiects, as the defence and honno^r of his Ma^{tie} and the publique gou^rment. To which end I haue p^rsumed to comand my seruant to giue his daiely attendance on yo^r honno^r for yo^r direc^rons, altho^{ugh} I humblie desire that Yo^r Honno^r wilbe pleased to be a meanes I may haue leaue to attend theire Lo^{ps} my selfe, the better to giue satisfac^ron of all the pticulers, and to finishe such other busines as standes my poore estate upon, and withall to advance the designe of the West-Indies, which if I be not deceaued is more forwardes then itt seemes to bee, and I knowe it to be a matter under Correc^ron soe necessarie for his Ma^{ties} seruice and for the estate of his affaires as if it be omitted, there can nothing to purpose be efected that shalbe of power to advance our decayde honno^r, or worke safety to his Ma^{tie}. Altho^{ugh} I must acknowledge what hath bin done, to haue bin well intended and necessary to be put in a foote. All which I presume to speake out of a loyall hart, and a will to hazard my selfe, my Freinds, and Fortunes in itt; Ould altho^{ugh} I am, and might better for my pticular seeke to settle my selfe to dye in a more peaceable course, yet to make itt appeare that if meanes may be had there is soe much industrie used, as when his Ma^{tie} shall call for itt; Itt is possible (under Gods favo^r) to turne the Currant of things another way, and in a good measure to giue newe luster to our Nation. But not to presume farther on yo^r honno^rs favour then in dutie itt becomes mee. I will humbly Craue pardon for my boldnes,

nes, and continewe to pray for yo^r increase of honno^r and euer rest

Yo^r honno^{rs} most humble servant / FERD: GORGES.

from his Ma^{ties} Fortt by Plymouth this 5th of July. 1627.

End: To the Right honourable S^r John Coke knight principall Secretary to his most Excellent Ma^{tie} at Courtt giue theise. 1627. July 5. S^r Ferdinand Gorges frō Plimouth. 12 or 14 peeces of Ordinance demanded by the Contrie. Supplies for the Castle & Iland. Increase of guard. Leaue to cō up.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXI. No. 67.)

CONWAY TO SIR F. GORGES.

S^r In the presence of the King I opened yo^r packet directed to me, wherein I found onely a cleane sheet of pap, and there being come att that Instant a word or two from S^r Henry Meruin ⁶⁴⁷ vice admirall of y^e narrow feas that certaine Hollanders had seene his Ma^{ts} fleet shoote all one day vpon the Isle of S^t Martins ⁶⁴⁸ his Ma^{ts} desire was increased to heare farther of the fleet, and had much hope of the inside of y^r letter, and finding onely a blanke was much confused, and suspended betwene Choller and wonder. But then p̄sently receauing a letter from S^r James Bagg, In w^{ch} was inclosed in a sheet of pap the examination of Cornelius Petersen, I tooke

⁶⁴⁷ Sir Henry Mervin was an Admiral of the Fleet, and served with sufficient distinction to merit the honor of knighthood, which was bestowed upon him at Royston, April 19th, 1619.

⁶⁴⁸ One of the West India Islands, which on account of its commodious bays and roadsteads afforded a shelter to Spanish shipping.

tooke upon me to assure his Ma^{tie} that yo^u intended to haue put up the same Relation, but yo^r secretary mistaking had put up a cleane pap in place of it, and his Ma^{tie} apprehending it soe, and hauing as much another way as yo^u meant him did passe by that accident. I doe assure yo^u his Ma^{ties} affe~~c~~con and the cause he hathe and desire to heare of his fleet deserues to be satisfied, to addresse any thing to his Ma^{tie} I shall be glad for the Interest I haue in yo^u to haue opptunitie to excuse the former mistake and to improue y^r seruice to him in all I can and that in the Condition of y^r

[Copy incomplete and unsigned.]

AMPTHILL, 21 July, 1627.

End: July 29. 1627. To S^r Ferdinando Gorge.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXIV. No. 70.)

SIR F. GORGES TO CONWAY.

MAY IT PLES YOUR LOR^{SP} her is arived a small man out of Gersey that reportes they understand the frenche kinge hath a flete of 20 fayell of shipes at humfleir⁶⁴⁹ in Normandey and ther is likwayes ten thousan men who as they faye ar bound for Gersey, this newes is soe confedently beleved by the Governor and the reste of the coumaunderes, that the inhabetenes ar allmoste every daye in armes, and seem to apprehend this alarrume wth a great dell of feare, ouer it This newes is in efecte but the sam I have latly reseved from other partes fave that they speake of 20 fayell of shipes mor that ar to

coum

⁶⁴⁹ Honfleur, a seaport eight miles southeast of Havre.

coum from other portes and an expectasian the frenchemen
 have of soum shipes that is to coum out of Spayn for to
 goyn wth them, if it be soe, it maye as well be conseved that
 ther intent is not for aney small Islandes, w^{ch} they know they
 cannot kepe longer then they ar M^r of the fees, therfore it
 maye beter be concluded (in my jugment) that ther purpose
 is rather far from parte of the Mayn, or to indevor to pute us
 from the atemptes we have in hande, how soum ever, (vnde1
 corexision) my thinkes it weare not amyes, that present order
 weare geven for the strenghninge of our gardes, the repera-
 siones of o^r decayes and suplye of our stores, materes of
 that consequenes as your lo^{fp} knowes, as I cann but wonder
 it is yet to doinge consideringe the p^ſent state of the worelld
 how it standes, for my owne parte feinge how mouche I have
 bin neglected in my sutes in this kind, I stand amased as
 on that knowes not what to do, but my truste is by that
 tim my nexte leteres coumes unto ther H^{fs} they will see good
 caues to make a spedey dispache of besnes of this natuer, for
 I cann heyr of nothinge but preperasiones uppon prepera-
 siones, to strike a hom blowe on us, that ar strageled abrode,
 before we have armed our sellves for o^r owne defenses, my
 truste is your Lo^{fp} will pardon my playn delinge and as beinge
 no straynger to the cores of my life, will ever hould me for

Your lo^{fp} faythfull servant /

FERD: GORGES.

From PLYMOUTH this 21. of August 1627.

End: To the right honorable my much honored Lord, the Lord Conway Principall
 Secretary to his most excellent Ma^{tie} att Court. theis. August 21. 1627. S:
 Ferdinando Gorges. The p^ſpara^con of Shipping, and Men in France. Ap-
 p^ſhension that the deſſigne is againſt Jersie: Probabilities it may bee intended
 againſt ſome pte of the Mayne. Prepara^cons at home altogether neglected.
 (State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXIV. No. 83.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

MAIE IT PLEASE yo^r LOPS: Itt is nowe more then tyme, that I p̄sent my former sute unto yo^r Lōps. for supplies both of men, & puisions, for the better defence of this place, seeing I heare from all ptes the great p̄parācons that is in hand, both in France & Spaine, to Joyne together for the venting of their malice upon o^r Nation, & howe fuddainely they are to be expeſted, I leaue to yo^r wisdomes to Judge, seeing at this instant there are upon o^r coast fixe faile of great shippes of the French Kings, & two Biskmers, both of them lying as yet, of & on betweene Silley & the coast of France taking & fincking all of o^r Nation that Comes athawrt them, & the Biskmers wthin this 12 daies ceazed on seven or eight of our Colliers, whereof they funcke ſome 4. or 5. and carried away the reſt, as allſo all the Pilats they can meet with that are good Coaſters, and there is Fowrtie Frenchmen more as I understand of good burden making readie in ſeuall places, & of ſmall Barques diu^s to bee ſett out by pticuler perſons, all which wilbe able ſo to invest the Coaſt, as if itt be not prevented in tyme, there wilbe noe trading as much as from portt to portt, much leſſe into forraigne partes. Befides they will not omitt to attempt to land wherſoever they ſhall find they may doe moſt miſcheif, as well to the diſtruccⁿon, and ſpoile of the countrye, as to the diſhonno^r, and danger of his Ma^{ts} State and Goⁿment, being the things ſpecially that the warr threatneth, and muſt of neceſſity bee looked for, and accorſingly ought in tyme to be forſeeene, and preuented, for itt

itt hath ben all waies obserued that there is nothing that threatnes more danger, then the forflowing of tyme, and the neglect of opportunity. Therefore good my Lords I beseech you to leaue mee noe longer destitute of meanes necessary for a place in this Consequence, for without itt there is noe Captaine that is able to oppose an enemy, nor noe place can be secured or defended. Itt is my dutie onely to adūtice & petiſon your Lo^{ps} in theis cases. And must of necessity leaue itt to yo^r wiſdomes to doe therein what ſhall ſeeme beſt prouided that if ought happen for want of what is fitt, the fault may not reſt on mee, ſeeing I haue noe power more then beſtis an humble ſuto^r for his Ma^{ts} hono^r and ſafety, and I am the more instant in this, because I am ſenſible of the dangers that threatnes us at this preſent on eñye ſide, and the ſmall meanes that I ſee in pparaſon to oppose itt, Good my Lords pardon mee if the zeale I beare to the proſperity of my Countrey inforce mee to preſume to ympotune yo^r paſtice beyond good manno^{rs} Itt may be I ap̄phend that, that is not common, because I haue had ſome expeſience, more then eñye man hath had, and doe knowe what I could doe in like caſes, & doe beeleeue that itt is not ympossible for an enemy to doe as much. But I will forbeare to ſaie any more for feare to be thought ouer preſumptuous, or two unmannerly. And ſo Comitting your Lo^{ps} to Gods holy protec^{con} I euer reſt

Yo^r Lo^{ps} humble Seruant /

FERD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ties} Fort by PLYMOUTH, the 23 of 1627.

End: To the right honorable my very good Lords, the Lords of his Ma^{ts} moſt hono^{rble} Privy Councell: theiſe. 23. of Auguſt, 1627. From S^r Ferdinand Gorges, at Plimouth.

(State

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXVIII. No. 56.)

SIR F. GORGES TO CONWAY.

My LORD. Here arriued this p̄sent daie one Salker Dirickson of Horne in Holland, who came from S^t Martyns the eleventh of this instant, by whome I perceave the Forts are not yet rendered, and that hee was tould by one of the Captaines of the Army that the Dukes Grace was resolued to besiege as well the Little Fortt, as the greater. That the French king had made sevall attempts to put in supplies into the Fortt, but some of them were taken and some other funcke, soe as itt is conceaued that the defendants are in great distresse, and that it was not possible for them to hould out fourteene daies after his depture, if by some meanes or other they were not releuied in that tyme; That before his Coming from thence hee understood there was an attempt made with two or three shallopps, and one small Barque to thrust themselues in thorowe of guards that laye on the shoare sides, but for that there was a battery soe placed as beate on the bridge the Enemy had made to take in theire p̄uisions, hee heard that attempt came to nothing.

Hee saies farder that my Lord Duke himselfe is in good health and good hope, and that the Army is in good p̄sperity, and the 2500 men out of Ireland arriued there sixe daies before his coming from thence.

That the French kings people had raised some newe workes betweene their Fort and the towne of Rochell, and had allsoe erected another Fortt on the other side of the towne, soe as they are nowe besieged on euery quarter, to
ympeach

ympeach which the Rochellers haue discharged diuers Vol-
lies of great ordnance, and was answered with the like from
the French Army, soe as nowe the ware is openned on both
sides, and those of the religion thorowe all France in great
perplexity what to doe if that siege should Continewe. But
there is some hope that the French king wilbe inclynable
to fende to treat of peace with his Ma^{tie} as a thing desired on
all parts, and theis are the vulgar rumors that hee heares of,
which I thought not unfitt to recomend to your Lops. beter
intelligence of those Affaires, being desirous to approue my
selfe euer.

Yo^r Lo^{ps} humble seruant /

FERD: GORGES.

PLYMOUTH FORTT this 18th of September. 1627.

End: Septemb. 18. 1627. S^r Ferdinand Gorge. Advertisinge the report of
a Duchman cominge from the Isle of Rhe: [Received at] Ibridg past
fou[re o]cloke in the morning / For his Ma^{ties} seruice. To the right honor-
able my much honored Lord, the Lord Conway Principall Secretary to his
most excellent Ma^{tie} at Court theis. From the Fort by Plymouth the 18th day
at eight at night ⁶⁵⁰ hast hast hast hast post hast rec^t at Aishbton xviii of

7^{ber}

⁶⁵⁰ The endorsements placed by the postmasters upon this despatch show how rapidly the hasty post which bore it travelled for life. The despatch left the fort at Plymouth, at 8 P. M., September 18th, and reached Ivy Bridge, eleven miles distant, in about eight hours. Ashburton is twelve miles farther on; but the hour at which it was received there is obliterated, and the postmaster made a mistake in recording the date; but Exeter, nineteen miles farther, was reached at twelve o'clock on the night of the 19th. Thus far forty-two miles had been accomplished in thirty hours. Honiton is about sixteen miles from Exeter, and Sherborne about forty miles more, and this fifty-six miles was travelled in something over thirty-five hours.

Shaftesbury, sixteen miles farther, was reached at six o'clock on the night of the 21st, and Andover, about thirty-two miles farther, at past six o'clock on the morning of the 22d; while Basingstoke, about forty-six miles from London, was reached at past one of the same day. Thus one hundred and sixty-four miles had been accomplished in eighty-nine hours. We have no endorsement to show at what hour this despatch reached Secretary Conway's hand, but probably not earlier than the noon of the 23d, perhaps eight hours less than five days after leaving Plymouth, which is distant from London about two hundred and ten miles. We learn by the next letter that this despatch was sent by the "runinge packet," whatever that might be.

7^{ber} in the morninge receiued at Exter about 12 at night 7^{er} 19. Honiton . . . about . . . in the morning Sherborn past xj noun the xxjth Shafbre at vj at nite Rec at Andover at past vj in the morning at Basingstoke past on.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXXII. No. 29.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

My LORD. It is somthing strange unto mee, to heare from yo^r Lo^{pp} that you haue receaued noe answere of yo^r leres you were pleased to giue mee notice of, the miscarriage of myne directed to yo^r Lo^{pp}, in July last knowing very assuredly that I sent answere thereunto the 17 of that moneth by one M^t Withering, howe hee omitted the deli^{ly}e of them I knowe not. Wherein I humbly intreated that order might bee giuen that abuse might be thorowely dived into; For I knewe it was noe errore of myne nor my seruants, but must be a devise of a Legerdemyne, tending more to the pjudice of his Ma^{ts} seruice, then my pticular. Since that I haue sent se^ñall tymes, once by the runinge packet the 18 of September, and once by a messenger expresse, that went from hence, giving by them all a brief account of what came to my hands, according to the dutie of my place, and the respects I owe yo^r Lo^{pp}, to whome I will euer acknowledge my selfe bound for maney and maney yo^r noble fauours; Of late I haue forborne to write in particular for that I Conceaued that our ge^ñall lres were sufficient to giue accompt of the affaires here, as allso being somthing out of countenance to receaue noe aunswere of any of myne, but nowe I knowe where my erro^r of omission was, you shall find mee verie Carefull to obserue all those respects, that in dutey and loue,

I am tied unto, yet if I be not soe ample as my hart desires, I hope you will hould mee excused, seeing the uncertainty of their arriuall.

As Concerning the state of affaires here, it is as well as the tymes and meanes will afford, yet you must knowe that the country is not without Clamo^r for want of their money, nor the Souldiers without wants of cloathes euen to Couer the nakednes of maney of them, and the Captaines and Officers griouously Complayning of their necessities, and had not Care ben taken to supply them with this thowfand pownd, their spiritts would haue ben verie could, but nowe S^t John Chudleigh⁶⁵¹ is arriued, and I hope by satterdaie they will all bee aboard and readie to set saile, As for the supply of the Fort of S^t Martins I assure my selfe you haue heard at large from my Lord Willmot,⁶⁵² Who first receaued itt, and what my opinion of that busines is, yo^r Lo^{pp} should knowe if it were worthie yo^r trouble. And I haue maney businesse that much ymports mee at London this terme, if I may bee soe much bound to yo^r Lo^{pp}, as to haue leaue to come upp I would hould itt for a speciall fauour, and bee ready to receaue yo^r Comands in what lyes in mee. There is a Speech of some 25. saile of Dunkerkers. that are to come to joyne wth the French kings forces, for the releife of the Fortt, and some

⁶⁵¹ Sir John Chudleigh was the son of John Chudleigh, Esq., of Ashton, Somersetshire, a neighbor of Gorges, and "a man," says Prince, "who had a noble ambition to equal, if not excel, the bravest heroes and their noblest exploits: not at land, where is the least danger, but at sea. He died in the Straits of Magellan." Sir John, the son here spoken of, was knighted by

King Charles on September 22d, 1625, though his name does not appear in the Book of Knights.

⁶⁵² Sir Charles Wilmot was knighted by the Earl of Essex August 5th, 1599, and appointed Lord President of Connaught in 1616, and created Baron Wilmot of Athlone, January 4th, 1620. For valuable military services he was made Governor of Kerry.

some other of the king of Spaines Gallioons, the more certaintye is better knowne to yo^r Lo^{pp} howsoeuer I am sorry to see the yeare soe farr spent, and soe maney of o^r shippes abroad, out of tryme and beaten wth the stormes and tempests. The Spaniards enemy to both Nations looking howe hee may take opportunity to aduance his ends, and who onely is to be feared will giue the great blowe at last. But of this noe more saue that I beseech you to knowe I will euer rest in all I haue.

Yo^r Lo^{pp}s humble servant /

FERD: GORGES.

Fort by PLYMOUTH the 19 of Octobris. 1627.

End: To the Right honorable my much honored Lord, the Lord Conway Principlall Secretary to his most Excellent Mat^{ie} att Courtt, giue theis. October. 19. 1627. S^r Ferdinando Gorge. Concerning a bre formerly sent by him menconinge an inclosed paper that was not sent. Hee hath written diuers times since. The readines of the Shipps. The Countrey clamor for money: the souldiers for cloathes. A report of the Fort in Rhe beinge releaved. Spanish shipps to joyne wth the French to dryue the English from the Island. Hee desires leaue to come to London.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. LXXXIV. No. 42.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

My LORD I presum your lo^{pp} hath reseved the two laste leteres I sent you sene wth ther hath nothinge com unto my knowlege worthey your trubell, now my lor. of holand is fettinge fayell havinge a hopfull wind, a lite mon, and fayer wether, soe as by godes grafe by the nexte that Coumes from thenes you will heyr of ther hapey arivall ther.

The estat of thes partes hath bin soe fully related both by the leutenantes and Justis, to ther lo^{pp} as I know not mor to be

be fayed in that kind, onely, I do heyr from all partes wher aney ar beleited, that they ar like to be throst out of dores, and it is impossibell to loke for better, spesualy ther beinge nether autoretey order or derexfion to warante aney to take cores therin, nor Cap or offesfor to govern or hould the Soulderers in diseplyinge under awe and obedenes: soe as if it be intended that the inconvenenses likly to folow, shalbe avoyded, ther ll^{ps} mouste hasten the menes fite for it and that wth all possibell sped my truste is your lo^{fp} wilbe plesed to remember my humbell fute to have leve to coum for london to dispache thos besnes that cannot be don wthout my owne presentes even soe humbly restinge

Your lo^{rps} in all serves to be coumaunded /

PLYMOUTH this 8. of November 1627.

FERD: GORGES.

End: To the Right hon^r my mouche respeted lord Conaway prinsepall secretarey to his Magestey at Cort geve thes. Nouemb. 8. 1627. S^r Ferdinando Gorges. The E: of Holland ⁶⁵³ is readie to sett sayle. The Countrey is in much discontent upon the billitinge of theis new soldiers much disorder may happen there beinge neither money, nor order sent downe for them. Hee praiers leaue to come to London.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. XCII. No. 73.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY CONWAY.

MAY IT PLEASE YO^R Lo^{pp} The intelligences that wee haue of the French, & spanish forces, that are assembled neere Rochell

⁶⁵³ Henry Rich, Earl of Holland, was a favorite of James I., and was employed by him as Ambassador to France to negotiate the marriage between his son Charles and Henrietta Maria. He attempted to keep in favor both with

the unfortunate Charles and Parliament, and lost the confidence of both. Finally he openly espoused the cause of the king, whereby he drew upon himself the enmity of Cromwell, and was beheaded March 9th, 1648.

Rochell (wth confideraⁿon of the land Arme^y that is likewise neere unto them, comanded by the pson of a young kinge accompanied with soe maney hott spirritts, that are fraughted with desire of revenge, and hope of hono^r) hath given occasion to some of the discreetest Comanders of his Ma^{ties} shipps that are here, to Consider by what meanes the estate of his Ma^{ties} affaires in this place might bee best prouided for. And upon the motion of S^r Thomas Button ⁶⁵⁴ unto mee, that there might bee Conference hade with S^r Henry Marvyn, and S^r James Bagg what was best to be done therein. I presently tooke the opportunity to satisfie the same as in dutey it became mee, and on opening the busines, I found in them a sharpe appreheⁿon of the danger, and a willingnes in all, to doe there best to preuent itt, and entring into discourse with them of the particulers, I found things to stand in verie desperate case, for the shipps lyinge not soe conveniently as was meete, being subject unto maney hazardes, and their men sicke, and unable to doe what may bee expected from them, and the infection soe strong amongst them, that fewe of the Captaines, Masters, or officers, dust lye aboard, and to supply them wth newe untill the diseased were brought ashore, and the shipps Clensed, and made hole-some, was to send soe maney more into the Jawes of death. Whereupon it was concluded that the sicke should haue prouision made to entertaine them upon the Land, the
shipps

⁶⁵⁴ Captain Thomas Button achieved fame as a navigator, having, in 1612, made a voyage in search of the Northwest Passage. He sailed through Hudson's Strait, and was the first navigator who crossed Hudson's Bay from east to

west. On his return to England he received considerable attention for his daring voyage, and was rewarded by King James with the honor of knighthood, August 30th, 1616.

shippes that laye in hazard, to be drawne upp neerer to Osten, farder out of the tide, and under more shelter, and better security, that S^t Thomas Button should ride with his two shippes betweene the Ifeland, and the Mayne, and some one other of the small shippes, att Cawfen-Bay, and a small Pinace to lye of and on before the harbour for intelligence. And that the Countrey might bee in the more readines on aney allarum, the watches on the Coasts to be Comanded, Carefully to obserue such direcons as formerly they had receaued on like occasions, and of this much for the present, I thought itt my dutey to giue yo^r Lo^{pp} aduertisment of, that by yo^r honno^{rs} meanes I may understand, howe itt sortes with their Lo^{pps} approbacons, as allsoe their Lo^{pps} farder pleasures, what else their wisdomes shall approue to be more Convenient, that soe I may direct my selfe according to my dutey therein.

And I may not omitt to take the present occasion to remember yo^r Lo^{pp}, howe longe I haue ben a futo^r for supplies for this place, and meanes to repaire the defects thereof, which nowe lyes in rewen, and in a mannor unguardable, as I doubt not but yo^r Lo^{pp} hath well obserued heretofore, and seeing the enemy hath made soe neere an approach unto o^r Coasts, itt is more then tyme (in my poore opinion) some speedey order were giuen, for the strengthening of the guardes, wth the addition of some Compitent numbers fitt to attend such a seruice. And although I cannot doubt of their Lo^{pps} graue wisdomes, and great prouident cares upon knowledge hereof to suffer noe tyme to be ouer slipt for dispatch hereunto. Yet I must not neglecte (out of the dutey and obedience I owe to his Ma^{tie}) but againe, and againe,

humbly

humbly to beseech yo^r Lo^{pp} wth all expedi^{on} to be a meanes, that some present order may be given herein, that soe the worst may bee avoyded in tyme, and the hono^r, and safety of his Ma^{tie} prouided for. And I shall acknowledge my selfe bound to yo^r Lo^{pp}, as for maney other fauours, soe for this, and will euer bee ready to approue my selfe.

Yo^r Lo^{pps} in all I am able to serue you /

FERD: GORGES.

From his Ma^{ties} Fortt by PLymouth the eight of February 1627.

End: To the right hon^{ble} my much honored Lord, the Lord Viscounte Kill-Ulter. Principall Secretarie of State att Courtt giue theise. Februarie 8. 1627. S^r Ferdinando Gorge.

(State Papers, Domestic Correspondence, Charles I., Vol. L. No. 1.)

PETITION OF SIR F. GORGES TO THE COUNCIL.

To the right hon^{ble} the Lords of his Ma^{ts} most hon^{ble}: Priuie Councell.

The humble peti^{on} of S^r Fardinando Gorges Knight.

Whereas the officers and soldiers of his Ma^{ts}: Fort and Isleland by Plymouth being unpaid their entartaynem^t for theis 3 yeeres & a quarter ended at Christmas haue endured such extremities (notwthstandinge all the meanes, this peti^{on}er by himselfe and his frends could make for their sustenta^{on}) that death by famyne hath overtaken some of them, and other some haue suffered y^e highest degree of want, the rather increased through the late Visitation of Plymouth beinge (poore wretches) deprived of the releiffe of their frends abandoninge that place /

And whereas this peti^{on}r is by reason of his longe forbear-
inge

inge foe preffed upon by his owne most ymportunate necessities, as it distroyes all thoughts of the best things he aymed at for his Ma^{ts}: service, & doe over charged wth such continuall cryes of the soldiers sent all most in daylie messages and petiçons, as inforceth this petiçon^r humblie to acquaint yo^r lo^{ps} therewth that by yo^r Compaffionate pvidence the worst maie be pvented in tyme.

And whereas yo^r petiçon^r is now inforfed to attend his Ma^{ts} Comiffion in thofe pts where he hath latelie forfeited his creditt to manie of the poore inhabitants to whome he wth others stood ingaged for releife of the soldiers belited in that County, he conceaues it would be noe meane aduancement to that service nowe intended if they might find the monies to be levied there, dispoſed of to the pſent defence of that County & satisfaçcon to y^e office^{rs} & poore soldiers ferving amongst them.

Maie it please yo^r lo^{ps} to giue order to the lo: Treforcer to the same effect, from whence yo^r petiçon^r doth ground more certaine hope of y^e good successe of that ymployment & through w^{ch} yo^r pet^r shall receaue ſome ſatisfaçcon & yo^r lo^{ps} find him to continue his prayers for all increafe of honors.

[FERD. GORGES.]

[No endorsement.]

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VI. No. 44.)

SIR F. GORGES TO CAPTAIN JOHN MASON.

S^r I perceauue by yo^r lere of the xijth of this instant y^t there is arived a Shipp att Plymouth lately come from the

the Dutch Plantaçon in the parts of New England, and the course you haue taken for the staye of her untill the pleasure of the State bee further knowne wherein you haue done exceeding well, as for the ſtere yo^u write unto mee for, I haue it not heere to ſend you, neither doe I thinke it of anie greate moment if I had it, for the matter wee are to ſtand upon is the Just tittle his Ma^{ty} hath unto thoſe p^ts both in reſpect of the firſt diſcouery thereoſ by ſubjects of this Nation, the Primer ſet ſure,⁶⁵⁵ and the actuall poſſeſſion thereoſ by vertue of the ſeñall Paſents graunted from their Ma^{ts} the kings our Soueraignes, w^{ch} I affiſſe my ſelfe they nor their Maifters will not goe about to annihillat, or make void, Besides yo^u may remember that it pleaſed his late Ma^{tie} kinge, James of famous memory to giue order to his Ambaſato^r wth the ſtates of the vniited Provinces to queſtione by what authority any of their ſubjects tooke vpon them to haue to doe in thoſe Limitts wthout his Lyceſſe, To w^{ch} they aunſwered that they knew of none of theirs that offendēd thereiſ, but if there were any ſuſh, it was out of their private adveſtures, and not by any authority deriued frō them, neither had they anie purpoſe to iuſtifie their pceedings thereiſ, as more at large it may appeare by the Ambaſato^rs aunſwere made from them in y^t behauſfe as is well knowne to my lord of Arundell and diuers others of the lords.

For my owne part I am as fory as yo^u are I cannot bee ſoe ſuddenly att london as you deſire I ſhould bee but imediatly after Eaſter God willing I will come upp, onely to putt thoſe buſineſſes in the Way it ought to bee in, both for
the

⁶⁵⁵ The primer feiſure.

the honor of his Ma^{tie} and State, and the pticular benefitt of our selves, being soe farr ingaged therein as wee are.

As for the ptie you write of that hath lived wth the Dutch soe longe time I wishe yo^u would not omitt to keepe him on reaonable condicons untill my comeing vpp, in the meane while that you will informe your selfe of the strength they haue where they liue, how fortified, & puided for, how farr vpp, into the Maine they bee, What other Commodity they finde besides their Trade of furrs, what Cattle, what Horses, and what carriages they make vse of wth what people they hold Coraspondancy wthall, and what Enemyes they haue, and in what parts of the Country ther Enemyes, or freinds are.

That you use yo^r best meanes to plonge the staye of the Shipp att Plymouth, till the Lords may bee thorowly satisfied from us, of the Consequence of those businesses, and how fitt it wilbee they bee prohibited the Trade of those parts for many Reasons not sudenly vnderstood; besides the dishono^r offred his Ma^{tie} to Trench on his Ma^{ts} Terretoryes wthout leaue, as in case of that nature ought to bee fought for, his Ma^{tie} haueing phibited his owne subiects, not free of those Terretoryes, from psuming to frequent those pts wthout Lycence first had from the Councell for those Affaires.

What is more to bee done for the pſent I must leave to yo^r owne Judgem^t that knowes as well as my selfe what course to take therein, assuring yo^u there shal bee nothing wantinge in my powre for the makeinge good of our Undertakings; for the sending, or bringin of the Horses promised by my lord Gorges, and my selfe when you finde the time fitt for it, lett mee knowe asmuch, and I will not plonge the dispatch

dispatch of them from theire parts. I lately write to M^r Eyre⁶⁵⁶ my owne Resolucon w^{ch} I will make good, lett others doe as they will, and I hope yo^u will not dispaire althoughe you finde a Couldnes in such as yett understands not the busines aright. I rec^d a lere from M^r Eyre, and by it I understood, how my Lord of Warwick had Nobly pmised to doe for the furtherance of our purpose, to whome I hope yo^u will apply your selfe att this psent for to second the following of the Lords as cause shall require, att my owne Cominge vpp you shall see I will putt more life to itt, then heertofore I seemed to doe, as haueing euery day more and more reason soe to doe ; lett this longe lere to yo^u excuse my not writing to M^r Eyre att this time, (for it is now late, and my wife not very well), to whome I desire to bee remembred, and soe to yo^u and to yo^r bedfellow assureing yo^u of mee as of

Yo^r true freind to be [ever] Comauanded /

FERD. GORGE.

BRISTOLL the 18th of March 1631.

End: To his very loveing freind Captaine John Mason att his house att Debtford theis ~~dd~~ 1631. Leave this lere att M^r Thomas Eyres his house in Fan-church street, in an alley entring in at the signe of the Tallowchandler to bee ~~dd~~ as abouesaid.

(Colonial

⁶⁵⁶ Thomas Eyre was one of the grantees in the Laconia Patent, and "Clarke and Accountant" of the Company, as well as its busines agent in London. He was also Secretary of the Council for New England. An interesting letter from him may be found in

the Provincial Papers of New Hampshire, Vol. I. pp. 61-65. He did not emigrate to America, but lived, and probably died, at his house in "ffan-church street, in an alley entring in at the signe of the Tallowchandler."

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VI. No. 52.)

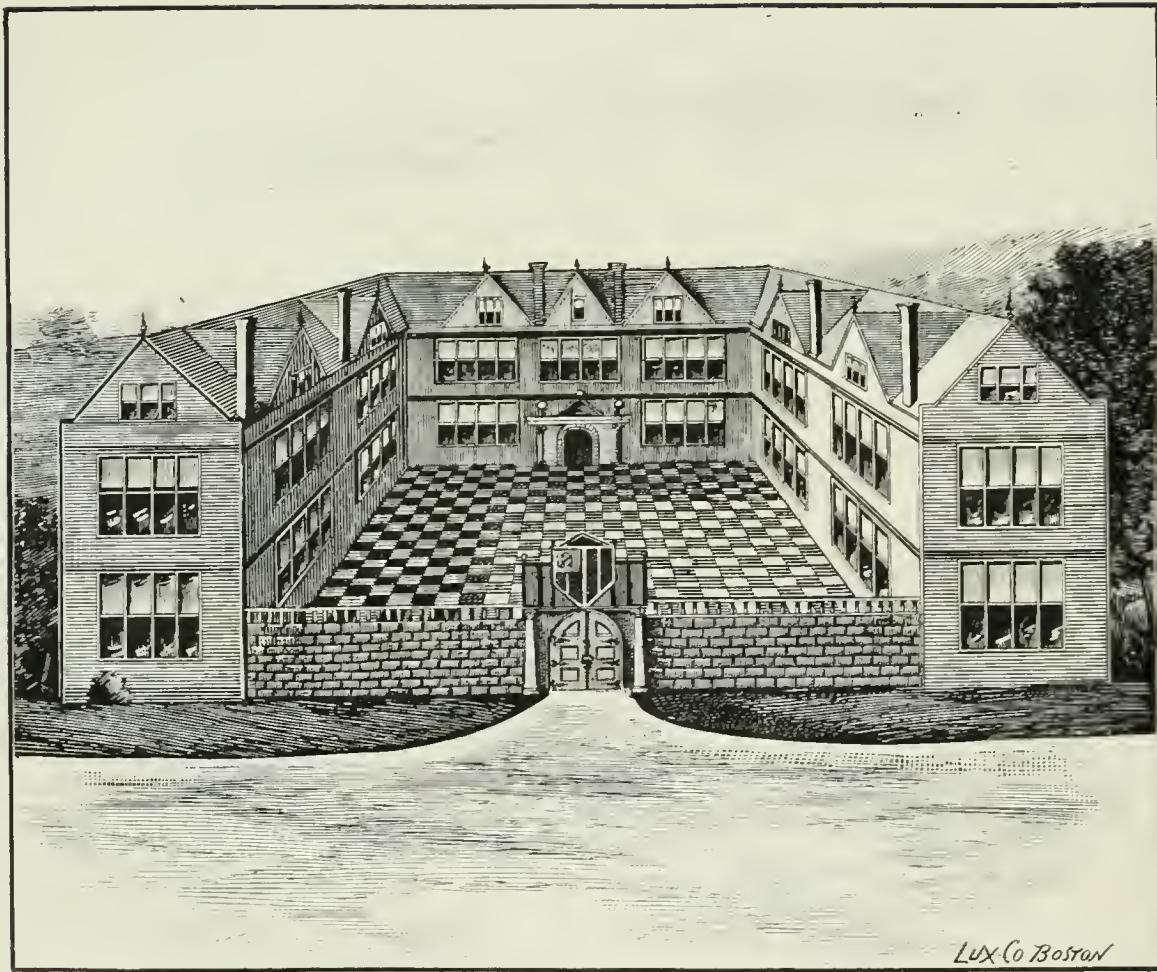
SIR F. GORGES TO CAPTAIN JOHN MASON.

S^r On Thursday night I receaued yours of the 30th of March by w^{ch} I understand howe yo^u haue pceeded against those of the Dutch Planta^con, I am glade the busines is before the Lords, I hope they will not bee ouerhasty in concluding a busines of that nature, considering howe much it concernes both the honor of the Kinge, and State to make good the interest they haue therein, yo^u shalbee assured I will not ptracte any time of my coming vpp, Butt I must acquaint yo^u wth an unhappy accident that beefell mee the same day I receaued yo^{rs}; For haueing bine wth my lord Pawlett,⁶⁵⁷ and divers others of my priuate freinds att a horse Race I tooke a fale from my horse, and am now in soe much extremetie of paine, as I am not able to moue, or stirr, but as I am helped by maine strength of my fr^rvaunts, not wthstanding by Gods fauour I hope to bee wth you in very shorte time, what shifte soever I make to Travell; I am sory to heere you are soe poorely seonded in a matter soe iust, and hon^{ble}; I conceiue you may haue from Mr Shirly a Copy of that w^{ch} came to my hands from those of New Plymouth, wth more pticulers, then came to mee, itt may please yo^u that hee may bee spoken wth about it; I doubt not but att my cominge. I shalbee able to giue both his Ma^{ty}, and the Lords sufficient
satisfac^ccon

⁶⁵⁷ Sir John Poulett was made Lord of Hinton St. George, June 23d, 1627. He was knighted, with his eldest son, Sir John, by the Earl of Lindsay, on board the ship *Mary-honor*. He took an ac-

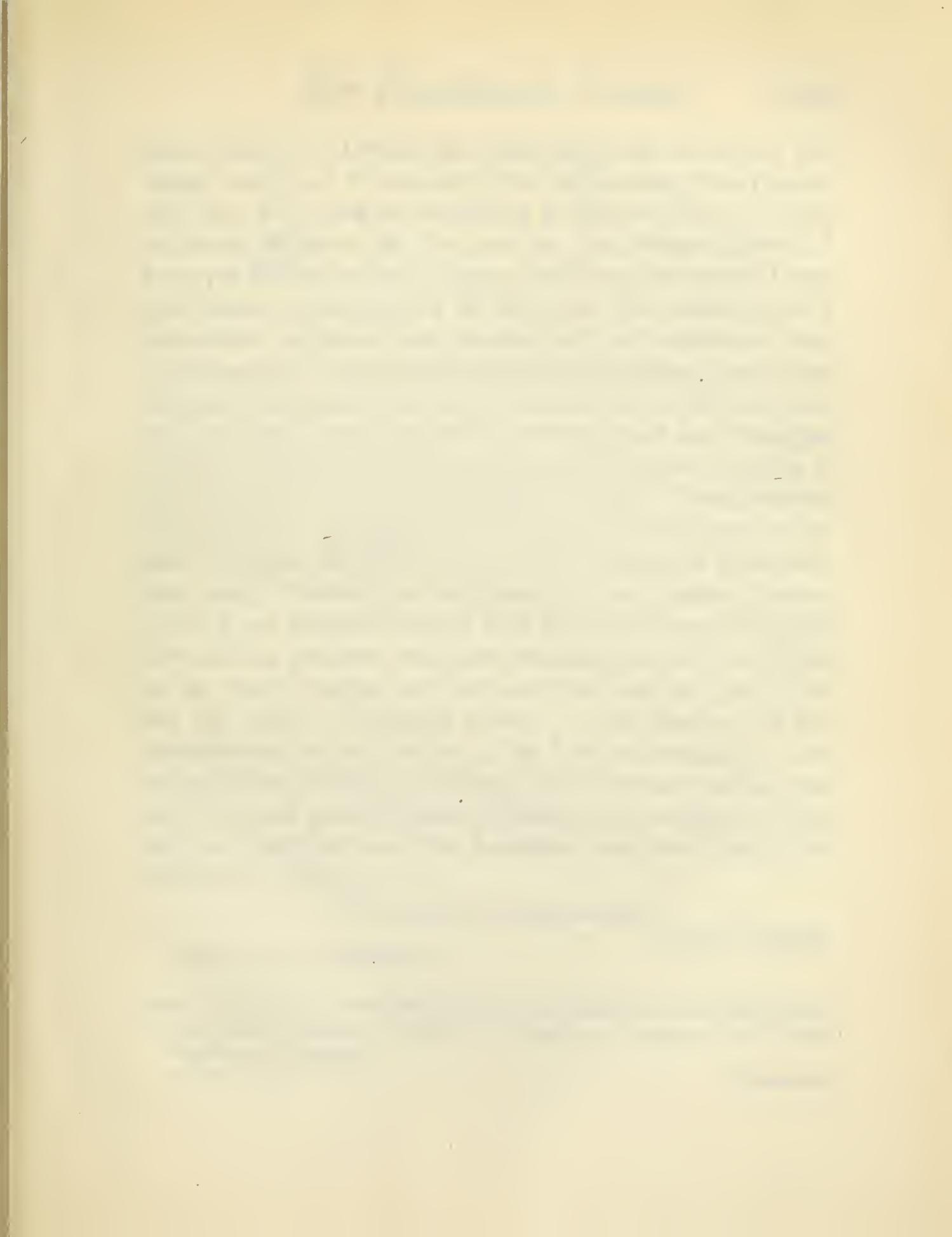
tive part, on the king's side, in the rebellion, but was pardoned by Parliament upon paying a fine of £4,200. He died March 20, 1649.





LUX Co Boston

The House of Sir Ferdinando Gorges at Bristol,
From "Exact Delineation of the Famous City of Bristoll," A. D. 1673.





satisfaccon for to fortefie the Justefyinge (not the stay of the Shipp onely,) but to prosecute their displanting from thence, And that w^{ch} is now to bee desired is that wee may bee heard to speake before ought bee done for the Shipps dispatch I hope yo^u will make some shifte to send away the horses I sent you before the receipte of M^r Eyres to the contrary, for I knowe they wilbee of more seruice, and worth then any you will serue your selues wthall att the Islands, besides heere is noe Shipping that goes from hence till towards the Winter quarter, but what yo^u doe betweene yo^u shall please mee, though I desire Extreamly they may goe att this present, though it were wholly on my owne accompte for their Transportacon wth the horses; lett this suffice I pray you for this present for that my paine will suffer mee to say noe more att this time; saue onely I beseech you to Remember my humble seruice to my Lord Marshall and to Lett his hono^r knowe the Misfortune that retaynes mee from attending his Lo^{pp} soe foone as my harte desires, and soe much you may bee pleased to lett my Lord of Warwick knowe in like Manner, wth the remembrance of my seruice to his Lo^{pp} beseeching him not to bee flacke wherein you knowe his helpe may further the test Wee shall gaine thereby, Wilbee the knowledge of what may bee expected from him heereafter, and soe I comitt yo^u to God and Reste /

Yo^r assured Loveing freind /

FERD. GORGES.

BRISTOLL the vj^e April 1632 /

End: To his assured loveing freind Captaine John Mason att his howse att Debtfford p^{re}sent / theise 1632 April 6. S^r Ferdinand Gorges to Cap^t Mason Hollanders in Virginia /

VOL. III. — 33

(Provincial

(Provincial Records of New Hampshire, Book I. p. 27.)

SIR F. GORGES AND J. MASON TO T. WANNERTON⁶⁵⁸ AND
A. GIBBONS.⁶⁵⁹

MR. WANNERTON AND MR. GIBBINS: These are to let you know that wee, wth the consent of the rest of our partners, have made a devision of all our land lying on the north-east side of the harbor and river of Pascattaway of the quantities of w^{ch} lands and bounds agreed upon for every man's part, we send you a coppie of the draft, desiring your furtherance, with the advise of Capt Norton and Mr. Godfrey,⁶⁶⁰ to set out the lynes of division betwixt our lands and the lands of our partners next adioning, because we have not onelie each of us shippes people present to plant upon our owne lands, at our owne charges, but have given direction to invite and authoritie to receive such others as may be had to be tenants, to plant and live there, for the more speedie peopling of the countrie. And whereas

there

⁶⁵⁸ Thomas Wannerton was an associate grantee in the Laconia Patent to Gorges, Mason, and others, of the 3d November, 1631. He was a conspicuous figure in early New England history, chiefly on account of his reckless daring and defiance of moral law. Savage, in *Winthrop's Journal*, says that "Wannerton seems to have died as he lived." He was shot dead while making an unprovoked attack upon the farmhouse of D'Aulnay, Governor of Acadia, at Penobscot, in 1644.

⁶⁵⁹ Ambrose Gibbons was the agent of Captain John Mason, and factor of the Company of Laconia. He was an energetic and useful man in the little

colony on the Piscataqua, and is a distinguished figure in the early history of New Hampshire. He died July 1st, 1656. His descendants in New England are numerous.

⁶⁶⁰ Edward Godfrey, of Barnend, Wilmington, Kent, born in 1584, who, says Dr. Banks, "participated in all the trials of colonization in Maine, from 1629 to 1655, when he found himself stripped of lands and authority, a victim of the usurpation of Massachusetts." He represented the Gorges government, as Governor, for several years preceding his return home to prosecute his claims in England, where he died, a prisoner for debt, in the Fleet, Ludgate, in 1663.

there is belonging unto me, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and unto Capt. Mafon, for himself, and for Mr. John Cotton⁶⁶¹ and his deceased brother, Mr. William Cotton, both whose interests Capt. Mafon hath bought, the one halfe of all matters mentioned in the inventorie of householde stiffe and implements left in trust wth you by Capt. Neale,⁶⁶² whereunto you have subscribed y^{or} names, and whereof a coppie is herewth sent, we desire you to cause an equall division, as neere as possiblie may, to be made of all the saide matters mentioned in the inventory in kinde, or if some of them cannot be soe divided, then the on halfe to be made equall to the other in valew of all the said matters, except the cattell and suites of apparell and such other things as belong peculiarily to Capt. Mafon, and to deliver the said one halfe of all the saide matters so to be divided unto Mr. Henry Jocelyn,⁶⁶³ for the use of our Plantations; taking an inventory thereof under

⁶⁶¹ John Cotton was admitted to Trinity College, Cambridge, at the age of thirteen, and by his conspicuous ability soon became the head lecturer of Emanuel College. In 1612 he became the minister of Boston, Lincolnshire; but incurring the hostility of Laud, on account of a charge that he did not kneel at the sacrament, he was obliged to flee from his home to escape persecution. He reached the shores of New England, after great perils, September 4, 1633, and soon after became a colleague of Rev. Mr. Wilson, in the church at Boston, with which he remained connected for a period of nineteen years. He died, December 23d, 1652. William Cotton, his brother, did not emigrate from England. For an extended account of John Cotton, *vide Magnalia Christi Americana*, by Cot-

ton Mather, D.D., F.R.S., Hartford, 1855, Vol. I. pp. 252-286.

⁶⁶² Captain Walter Neale, his title being a military one, came to New England with the colony sent to the Piscataqua by Gorges and Mafon in 1630. He was the governor of the plantation for three years, at the end of which period he returned to England, where we find him, several years later, applying for the governorship of New England, without success, when he passes from view.

⁶⁶³ Henry Josselyn was one of Sir Ferdinando's most trusted agents in Maine. He was a man of ability and probity, and faithfully represented his patron's interests to the last. He was a resident of Black Point, near Portland, until the Indian War, when he went to Pemaquid, where he died in 1683.

under his hand, of all you shall so deliver him, and making certificate to us thereof. And for your so doeing, this shall be your suffitient warrant and discharge. And so we rest,

Y^r verie lovinge friends,

FERDIN: GORGE.

JOHN MASON.

PORTSMOUTH, Maye 5th, 1634.

End: Sir Fer: Gorge and Mr. Mason, to Mr. Wannerton and Mr. Gibbins, 5th May, 1634.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 14.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE KING.

FOR that the world takes notice, his Ma^{tie} hath bin pleased to take the Mannaging of the Affaires of the severall plantaçons into his owne hands: It is conceaved, that it will haue the freer passage under so absolute a power, wthout losse of tyme or oportunity. And for that the plantaçon of New England is now raised, unto so much eminency some inhabitants or other of his Ma^{ts} owne subiects.

It is humbly referred to better consideraçon, how necef-
sary it is that it should be divided into severall provinces,
both for the ease of the subiect in case of Justice and
more conveniency of the publik govern^m: in case of comon
defence.

That to those provincs there be assigned governors &
other assistants and officers for administraçon of Publik
Justice and preservaçon of the coñon peace betweene partie
& partie.

That both for the honor of his Ma^{tie} and the satisfacçon
of such noble & geñous spirits as willingly interresse them-
selves

selves in thosse undertakings. It is likewise desired that some person of honor may be assignd under the title of Lord Governor or Lord livetenaunt to represent his Ma^{ts} person for the settelling of A publike state, wth that honor gravity and order that becomes so great a Majesty & so grave a Counsell that are the disposers thereof.

That the lord governor or Lord livetenaunt be assited wth such other officers as are proper to such a foundacon. That is to say; one Lo: Bishop A Chauncellor A Treforer A Marshall an Admirall A Maister of the ordinance and a Secretary of State, wth such other Counsellors as shalbe thought necessary assitants vnto them.

These to have power to erect Courts of Justice to settle subordinate officers give limits to the severall provincs and make such other orders & institutions, as shalbe found necessary Not fore thought upon by his Ma^{tie} & his Counsell so farre forth as by his Co^mission he shalbe therunto lymited.

That in case it maie be thought, the chardge of settleing such a kinde of goverment wth thosse titles, and other officers of such eminence may be too great a chardge for his Ma^{ty}. so sodainely to undergoe: It is not doubted but there wilbe found some of extraordinary quality that being honored wth his Ma^{ts} Co^mmaund and employed in that Manner shall undertake it wthout his Ma^{ts} Chardge upon such other condic^{ons} as shall tend to his Ma^{ts} future proffit and the good of the publike. Neither shall the persons soe called, be wthout good meanes of themselves to assist them in the maintenaunce of theire severall places, being neither papistically nor scizmatically affected but truely reverenceing the Hyrarchy of the church & faithfully tendering the publike good

good wth the honor of his Ma^{tie} and the glory of God Almighty.

That if some such course as this be neclected, or a lighter way observd in sending over one or more persons of meane fortunes and reputa^{cō}n; The better fort will contemne the imployment, The lesse worthy dishonor it, his Ma^{ts} service be hindered, The present oportunity omitted And the ex-pecta^{cō}n of the publike happines defeated, our Nation slighted, and our Attempts of the best designe derided.

Which cannot be feared in this case seing it hath already bin soe gratioufly and so gravely deliberated & concluded upon Howsoever it be given out by the sectaries; That it is like to have but a slow progresse, or peradventure fall to ground for want of some of power to followe it, or at least not to receave its dispatch, before they shall finde themselves capeable to defend the liberty they haue attained unto, supposinge his Ma^{tie} wilbe then unwillinge to exhauste his Treasure, to reduce theire obedience to his Authority especially when he shall finde them armed wth a defensive power and they shall seeme to feede the State wth a submissive obedience, and that but according to theire owne likeings neither, What dishonor and dainger this maie drawe wth it, is needeles to be remembered by mee, seeing it is more then apparent by theire present practises & publike proceedings; And therefore ought (in co^{mō}n opinion) to be speedily provided for, The better also to incourage his Ma^{ts} servants that laboure the prevention of the worst according to that duety they owe & the zeale they beare to the soveraigne Ma^{tie} As also remembringe that it is easier by neclect, or delay to quench the good affections of honest men, then to reforme
the

the errors of malitious spirits especially being once gotten to a powerfull head, as the Sectaries are sodainely like to doe.

All w^{ch} is humbly referred to his Ma^{ts} Royall pleasure wth like humility craving pardon, if I have straied beyond the lymits assigned me, That doe and ever will acknowledg my selfe.

His Ma^{ts} most humble and most obedient subject & servant /

FERDE: GORGES.

End: 12th Maij: 1634. S^r Ferdinando Gorges: New England.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 17.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY WINDEBANK.⁶⁶⁴

RIGHT HON^R: I hope I haue allready sufficiently inlarged my selfe how necessary I conceiue it is some speedy course were taken for the setling of the affaires of New-England, both for his Majesties honour and the publicke good of the subiects that doe languish for want thereof, nor can I doubt but that your honour hath before this as carefully and as nobley acquainted his Majestie and their Lo^{pps} therewith, soe soone as I may heare how it is accepted of, and the resolution grounded thereupon, I will not faile (for my particular) to adde my best endeavour to satisfie any doubt that may arise in the consideration thereof if I shalbe called there unto,

⁶⁶⁴ Sir Francis Windebank was a fellow-student and close friend of Laud; and when the latter attained power Windebank secured the secretaryship made vacant by the death of Sir Dudley Carleton. His friendship for Laud drew upon him the enmity of the Parliamentary party; and when the storm of rebellion burst upon the royalists he fled to France, where he died in 1646.

unto, in the meane tyme I will take upon me the humble bouldnesse to acquaint your honour that haueing had conferance with my Lord of Linsey⁶⁶⁵ and my Lord Gorges and some others about the state of those businesSES, (being both of them formerly of the councell of those affaires) and deliuering to them my opinion how it might be made hon̄ to his Majestie and profitable to his Realmes if persons of worth might be found willing to engadge themselues as actors in the managing thereof, neither of them but seemed soe well to relish it as they protested to me (in private) that if his Majestie were pleased to accepte of theire service and to call them thereunto they would willingly undertake it vpon such termes as might be agreeable to the state of such a desighn for my selfe (S^r) I hope I haue all ready sayd enought to manifest my zeale thereunto and I beseech you to beleue this much of me, whom (you may partly remember) had the honour to be breed under those great princes that well understood the state of theire neybours and how to lay the ground to advance theire ends longe before hand, the better to secure theire owne and to be able to affront their enimies far from home, if I haue attained ought either from their principlly, my owne experience or practise or from any other the most actiuest and of best iudgment and experiance that way with whom I haue beene formerly acquainted in those tymes of action, it was but to put the same in execution if occasion serued, or to leaue the knowledge thereof where it was dew, and for whose sakes I allwayes laboured in that kind I could say more of the fittnesse of this businesse

⁶⁶⁵ Sir William Alexander.

nesse in that behalfe, but I leauie it for a fayrer opportunity knowing that tyme will produce what is not as yet com-
monly thought vpon and I will forbeare to be farther
troublesome to your hon^t then becomes

Your honours humble servant / FERDE. GORGES.

from my hous in ASHTON this 6. of Jun. 1634 / nyer bristow.

End: To the Right hon^t S^t Franses Wenebanke prensepall secretarey to his
Majestey geve thes / New England 6: June: 1634. S^t ferdinando Gorges.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 34.)

CONSIDERATIONS BY SIR F. GORGES.

CONSIDERATIONS necessarie to be resolved uppon in settling the Gouernor for New England.

First seeing that there is such a number of discontented persons, gotten into the best parts of the country already, and that they are dailie seconde^d wth multituds, that are sent from hence by theire freinds and agents that support and incourageth them thereunto. Whether it were not fitt in policy of State A Restraint were made in that case untill licence were obtained from the lords, and that such as would goe over, were bound to be conformable to the rights & Ceremonies, of the Church.

That forasmuch as Authoritie & a large comiſſion is of noe effect where power is wanting to put the same in ex-
ecution especially when it is to be employed over a mul-
titude, that aime at nothing more, than to shake of all
Supreme power.

Whether it were not proper to second such authority wth competent power to prevent the scornes & insolencies, that in default thereof might be offered to the officers, to be employed, The disgrace reverting from whence it was derived.

That seeing the evills that may infue for want of tymely prevention, doe light aswell vpon the whole nation as the Soveraigne Ma^{tie} & his Counsell; There is noe reason but that the better sort of the nation be called to give theire seconds to prevent the evills, w^{ch} the honorable & honest affected cannot denie, seeing how ready the malitious & seditious are to circumvent what may hinder theire practises.

That therefore his Ma^{tie} maie be pleased by his gratiouse letters, To the livetenaunt & Justics of the severall Countys together wth the gentlemen & other of the best affections to his Ma^{ts} service, and the Comonwelth To send wth his governor such a Competent number of persons fit for plantacon as theire affections leads them vnto either Joyntly or severally as they please & those to be taken up and chosen out of such young persons as being married haue neither howse nor home of theire owne, but what they can get by theire laboures, & yet are subiect to manie children who (if theire parents laboure faile) fall to be chardgable to the parrishes, w^{ch} by this imployment is pvented And the setters out of them, shall haue a Competent porcion of land allotted vnto them in perpetuity to plant & manure to theire best advantages So as they shall see the meanes for them to make theire proffitts againe for theire disbursments.

Other

Other advertisements to be confidered of That howsoever the agent of New Plimouth p̄tende that the coming of the Dutch into the River of Connectacute, was wthout theire knowledge and that they did laboure to set downe by them to prevent theire farther intrusion uppon his Ma^{ts} Territories, It maie be doubted that they rather had intelligence wth them, and that it was a practise betweene them: For two speciall reasons The one that seeing the Rivers to the Eastwards of them be already planted, by such as favoure not theire waies & opinions; To prevent that none of the like Condiçons come to the West, they make it theire Coloure to fit downe by the dutch That so they might both inlarge theire extent and be free from the danger that might ensue from such a neigbourhood; neither were they hopeles that by such a peece of service, they might obtaine Coñission to continue theire possession and so haue more lawfull warrant for what they had done.

Theire second reason is That findeing his Ma^{tie} and theire Lor^{ps} begin to be fencible of theire disaffections both to his Ma^{ts} goverment & the state Ecclesiastical, they seeke in tyme to fortifie themselves, by the aid of the dutch & to assuer theire trade & commerce by theire meanes, if they be prohibited anie from hence as they expect to be, if they submitt not as they ought, wthin all probability they intended not to doe, till they finde themselves inforced thereunto, by a stronger hand than theire owne.

I wish this were but cojectured, but I feare it will appeare in the end to be too true Howsoever there is the leſſ danger to be feared when the worſt is prevented.

These things Considered to graunt them more extent, or authority

authority, were not safe: but to leave them to further order from theire Lo^{pps}s or the governor to be sent according to his Comission or Instrucccons to be given in that, or the like cases.

What fruite is to be expected from such, as they are, Who dare to say That if a drunken governer be sent over there, if they take him drunke they will put him in the stocks & send him back againe, Whether it be not more than tyme these people should be looked unto is humbly referred to better consideracon.

End: N: England S^r Ferd^{do} Gorges Nou. 1634.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 34. I.)

PROPOSED DRAFT OF A LETTER FROM THE KING TO
LIEUTENANTS-JUSTICES.

RIGHT TRUSTY & WELL BELOVED wee greete yo^u

It was the singuler care of o^r most honored lord and father of blessed memery; To indevoure by all just & kingly meanes, The propagating of the Christian faith, the inlargeing of his dominions, and the advauncement of the publike happines of his people: w^{ch} was the reason that moved him by his Royall authority, to incourage certaine his good subjects in theire undertakeings, to transport severall Colonies into those parts of America, that were not inhabited by any Christian princs or people, Since w^{ch} tyme there hath come unto us & o^r Counsell, so manie complaints of the abuses comitted by so^me, that have by indirect meanes gotten themselves interreffed, in the lymitts formerly passed to oth-
ers,

ers, from whence hath risen manie dangerous consequences & manie more like to ensue.

Having thereupon deliberatly advised wth our Counsell of State of the consequence of such a busines: Wee finde it a principall parte of o^r kingly duety; to administer tymely remedy for reformaⁿon, as well in respect of o^r honor, as for the future happines that may ensue, to these o^r Realmes, & the establis^hing of true religeon amongst the Salvages.

To w^{ch} purpose we have assignd certaine of, o^r Counsell whom wee haue specially authorised for that service, diligently to take care thereof from tyme to tyme.

And having given directions, for a Governer to be sent thether, for ordering the publike affaires betweene the severall plantaⁿons, and to settle a Counsell of State deliberatly to determine of a vniforme way, for the administration of Juf^tice through the whole Country, and to provide for the coⁿon defence of o^r good subiects, inhabiting there, in such sorte as may give us content therein. According to the tenor of our Comi^sion graunted, and the instructions he shall receave from us, or o^r said Counsell.

Now forasmuch as this was a busines from the begining tending to the publik good of o^r Realmes, Wee are for that cause gratioufly pleased, to make it free for all o^r well affected people, throughout o^r kingdomes to participate thereof, w^{ch} by these o^r l^{rs} wee do manifest & declare unto yo^u, Straightly requiring yo^u to publish the same, to so manie of the better sort, & the most active spirits in that County, as yo^u shall thinke fit to call unto yo^u, Who by yo^r examples may be encouraged to joyne in sending over wth o^r said Governer, such a competent number of people meete for plantaⁿon,

plantaçon, wth all necessary provissons fit for that employm. as theire zeale to the glory of God theire good affection to o^r service, & the weale publik shall induce them. fending wth them some one or more discrete & worthy persons to take chardge of theire imployments & to see theire dueties performed according to yo^r mutuall direc^rcons And that there be (above all) an espeiall care had, to the honesty of theire lives & conversation, whome they send, because men so sent are like to propagate & confirme a plantaçon, whereas the looser forte pve but losse to the adventurer & a dishonor to the kingdome.

To whome wee shall cause to be assignd such a proportion of lands, as maie give content for the present; The same to be inlarged as shalbe thought fit, upon a seconde or third divesion, To be appropriated to the severall undertakers or adventurers, & theire heires, for theire best benefit in perpetuity.

Of this o^r pleasure wee expect to receave a speedy answere, wth a perticuler accompt of the names of such as shall interesse themselves herein, & what numbers of people they resolve to send, to be in a redynes according to such tyme, as by o^r Counsell shalbe directed.

End: 3^o Nouem: 1634: S^t Ferdinando Gorges.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. IX. No. 115.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

MAIE IT PLEASE YO^R HONNO^R. It is humbly desired that theire Lo^{PPS}s wilbee pleased to take into theire Considera^rons, the

the hinderances that followes vpon this generall restraint of the Undertakers of Forraigne Plantaçons to transport such people as are for necessary imployments or such as are fitt to goe for the better fortifying of his Ma^{ties} authority in those partes.

That therefore it may receave its limitaçon to such, onely as are factioufly affected, or Scismatically inclined: who adresse themselues principally to the Baye of the Maffachusetts, for the strengtheing of that place to assure theire owne ends.

For pvençon whereof, theire Lo^{pps} maye bee pleased to phibite any more to goe to that place, but under such Cau- tions & Condiçons as shall seeme good to theire wisdomes.

That the rest that are to bee sent, or shall undertake anie Plantaçon in anie other of those Teretories may onely receave such Condiçons from theire Lo^{pps} or the Governo^r that is to goe, as is fitt for free Subject^s, according unto the liberties granted them by his Ma^{ties} Royall Charter.

That otherwaies they would bee pleased to take knowl- edge it wilbee infinitly to the hinderances of his Ma^{ties} Ser- vice, the rewne of maney well affected Subject^s that stand ingaged in theire fortunes in those businesses, and to the discouragment of aney to entertaine the like.

All w^{ch} is humbly referred to theire more grave Considera- çons, and such Convenient resoluçon as may bee best agreeable to the pſent tyme, and most advantagious to his Ma^{ties} Service.

FERD. GORGES.

End: S^r ferdinando Gorges.

(Colonial

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 36.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS FOR
PLANTATIONS.

MAY IT PLEASE YO^R Lo^{PPS} Whereas it pleased yo^R Lo^{PPS} to giue me order to conferr with such as were cheifelie interested in the Plantations of New England; To resolute whether they would resigne wholly the Patent to his Ma^{tie}, and soe leauie to his Ma^{tie} and his Counsell the sole manadgeing of the publike affaires wth reservation of euery mans right formerly graunted; Or whether they would stand to the saied Patent and prosecute the buisinesse amongst themselues. And to haue the saied Patent Renewed wth the reformation or addition of such thinges as should be found expedient.

Haveing conferred wth those that are now pſent and be principally interested in the buisinesse; It is humbly submitted to his Ma^{ts} pleasure to doe therein as he pleases; But doe desire notwithstandinge that his Ma^{tie} would graunt us that gratious favour that the Patent might be confirmed wth ſuch alterations and additions of Immunities and priuiledges as ſhalbe thought fitt.

And in reguard there is a doubt of the loſſe of time before a new graunt can be obtayned, or any ſettlement made otherwife, It is humbly prayed that the Patent, and the Seales of the Company and also the bookeſ of Actes may be called for and deliuered to him whom his Ma^{tie} ſhalbe pleased to appointe Governor of the Plantations, that he may make uſe of y^e advice of ſuch of the Counſell for thoſe affaires as he ſhall thinke fitting to call unto him, for the
present

present prosecution of the buisinesſ till further resolution from his Ma^{tie} and yo^r Lo^{pps} may be receiued. And that the perticuler grauntes belonginge to feuerall planters may be alſo deliuered to them. By w^{ch} meanes they ſhall haue power to proſecute their perticuler affaires and there wilbe occaſion and meanes to call togeather thoſe that cannot be now had and are principall members of that Corporation, and ſoe be able to deliberate wth the more Circumſpection what may beſt forte with his Ma^{ties} honor yo^r Lo^{pps} pleaſures and the publicke good.

Yo^r Lo^{pps} humble Servant /

FERDE: GORGES.

End: The anſweſe of S^r Ferdinando Gorges to the ppoſition made by the Lo^d Comiſſion^{rs} for plantaçons / decembre 9th 1634 / New England.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. VIII. No. 52.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY WINDEBANK.

S^r I beſeech yo^u to do mee the favo^r to lett theire lo^{pps} knowe; That forasmuch as I perceave it is his Ma^{ties} gratious pleaſure, to affigne mee Gouvernour into New-England, that I humbly deſire theire lo^{pps} wilbee pleased to giue order for expediſon to bee uſed in repealing of the Patents of thoſe already planted in the Bay of the Maſſachusetts, that there bee not juſt cauſe left of contenſon, by reaſon thereof when I ſhall arrive in thoſe partes.

That in the meane tyme there may bee ſome declaraſon made of his Ma^{ties} ſaid pleaſure as foone, as our grand Patent

is surrendred, whereby both my selfe, and my freinds may bee bould to make our severall pparacons for that Service, in due Seafon and att best rates.

That Order may bee giuen that such as are to transport anie numbers of planters into thos partes, may haue recourse unto the Governo^r assigned. To receave from him direccons where to settle themselues, & howe to governe theire affaires for theire pſent pfitts and safties, and free from the Society of any turbulent Spirritts to giue them offence, or impeachment.

That till farder Order may bee had the Governour may haue Commission to authorize some spetiall person wth the assistance of others to bee joyned wth him to gouerne all those wthout the limitts assigned to those of the said Bay, who nowe doe languishe for want thereof, & in divers letters desire that a Governour may bee sent. And are doubtfull of the wrongs to bee offered them, from those that are more powerfully armed, wth a shewe warranting what they shall attempt in that case.

That it may bee inserted in our resignacon to his Ma^{ties}: his gratiouſe pleasure to passe new Grants unto the Patentees, and others intereffed in those affaires of all ſuch partes, of the Teretories formerly assigned unto them, either by ſpetiall Grants lawfully obtained, or muuall agreement on betweene themſelues, that ſoe itt may appear to posterity nothing was done wthout due reguard of the generall right belonging to everie particular according to his Ma^{ties} Royall goodnes in that behalfe exprefſed. And wherein none can haue just cause to complaine, and all bound to bleſſe God for ſoe Royall

all respectes, and my selfe in particular, tied to Continue to you for your noble farderance hereof, as becomes

Yo^r Honno^{rs} humble S^rvant / FERDE: GORGES.

March. 21^o 1634.

End: To the Right hon^{ble} Sir Frauncis Windebancke Principall Secretary to the Kings most Excellent Mat^{ie} pſent theis / 21: March: 1634: S^r ferdinando Gorges.

SIR F. GORGES TO WILLIAM GORGES.

GOODE NEPHEWE: I vnderstand there is ſome difference betweene Mr. Trelawney and Captaine Camocke⁶⁶⁶ about the boundinge of theire Landes. For the better ſetling and ſatisfac^{con} of both parties, I haue thought it fitt hereby to praye & authorize you, with Vines and the rest of the officers belonging vnto mee for thofe affaires, indifferently to determine of the ſetlinge of theire ſaid ſeſtall boundes, ſoe as the Controversies maie receave a peaceable end betweene them. And for that I perceave that Mr. Trelawney⁶⁶⁷ is ſhorte of what may reaſonably giue him ſatisfac^{con} and incouragement to prosecute the busines hee hath ſoe Long travelled in, and hath already laid a faire foundation to his greate charge, & is ſtill refolued to bee a fartherer of the
publique

⁶⁶⁶ Captain Thomas Cammock, neephew of the Earl of Warwick, and one of the Piscataqua Company. He ſubſequently removed to Cammock's Point, now Prout's Neck, where he reſided for ſeveral years. He died while on a visit to Barbadoes in 1643.

⁶⁶⁷ Robert Trelawny, ſon of Robert

Trelawny mentioned in a former note. He was also Mayor of Plymouth, and a member of Parliament at the breaking out of the Rebellion, and being a royalist, was expelled from Parliament, and died "a prisoner according to the ſadneſs of the times," in Winchester House, in 1644.

publique seruice of those Partes, that you enlarge him towardes the River of Casco some two thowsand Acres more & cause a perfect plott thereof to bee made, and annexed to your returne of youre proceedinge, that soe I may passe vnto him such further Graunt thereof as shall serv to his liking. And farther, that you giue vnto the Governoour of Mr. Trelawnies People, Mr. John Winter,⁶⁶⁸ such authority as hath the rest of the Justices in those my Lymitts, that thereby hee may bee the better inable to second and farther the peaceable happines of what belongs vnto me. For all which this shalbee your warrant.

And that you deliuer a Certificatt of the same to Mr. Winter, to bee sent vnto mee. Even soe I Comitt you to Gods holy protection and rest

Your uncle & assured Friend /

FERD: GORGES.

ASHTON, 11th August, 1636.

End: To my beloued Nephew, Capt. William Gorges, Gouvernor of Somersett in New Ingland, or in his absence to Mr. Richard Vynes, or Mr. Thomas Bradbury,⁶⁶⁹ or any of them, giue these.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

SIR Hearing of some likelyhood of imploym^t extraordinaire in hand, as well by reason of the greate Iniustice offered to

⁶⁶⁸ John Winter, the agent of Robert Trelawny, born at Stogumber, in Somersetshire, in 1575, died at Richmond's Island, Trelawny's plantation, in 1645.

⁶⁶⁹ Thomas Bradbury, of Wicken Bonant, in Essex, where he was born

February 28th, 1610. He came to Agamenticus as an agent of Sir Ferdinand Gorges, in 1634, and subsequently removed to Massachusetts, where he filled important offices until his death, March 16th, 1695.

to his Excellencie the Prince Pallatinate, and his whole family, As also his Ma^{ties} resolucon to continue his navall forces for the guard of the narrow Seas, I am bould to recomēnd the bearer hereof Captaine William Gorges my Nephewe to yo^r honorable fauour to bee so employed as may sort with his reputaçon, being Sonne to my eldest brother, bredd vpp by mee in his Ma^{ties} service, and exercised in the practice of the Warr by Sea and Land, at home & abroad and was my Livetenant at Plymouth and since employed by mee into New England, in w^{ch} navigaçon (as well as in others) hee approued himselfe both an expert marriner, and a sufficient Captaine, being such as I am bould to recomend to bee fitt to serve his Ma^{tie} What your honno^r shalbee pleased to doe for his pferment shalbee an obligaçon to make our family to endeavour the merritting thereof. By this opportunity I am humbly bould vnder your honno^{rs} favour to p̄sent vnto you my obseruaçon of the two last years imploym^t by Sea, w^{ch} carried wth them a most provident intent, and hath purchased an honorable reporte, yet cold it not free the coast from the Turkish Pirates, nor the opportunity of others Bravadoes; although it is to bee acknowledged those noble persons employed therein did pforme what was in theire powers, either according to the Instruccons given them, or according to the vsuall practice of our nation. But for that new mischieves will require new remedies, and that tyme may produce worse effectes hereafter. Itt seemes not unwise vnder your honno^{rs} favour in my Judgment that such order were established as may both prevent the one and the other, itt being a matter easie to bee effected, and that in

in such a manner, as the forces by Sea and Land shall at all instances bee ready to seconde each other without terroure, or Confusion, such as Comonly followes suddaine alarums; And my hope is that what I say in this kind, will not bee otherwise vnderstood then I intend itt, w^{ch} is onely his Ma^{ties} ser-
vice, without anie vaine ambition or desire of imployment, such as it is vsuall to Men professing the warr, and without other meanes to live.

Besides I am growne a little doubtfull of the state of my owne bodie, not able to indure the Sea any long tyme: And therefore if my Service may bee accepted of, I must humbly pray to bee left at Liberty to retire my selfe when euer I haue settled the busines in such a way as may giue his Ma^{tie} & theire Lo^{pps} satisfaccon in what I haue propounded, and vpon knowledge thereof I will bee ready to giue my attendance, and then I shall haue the better leasure to giue an accompt to his Ma^{tie} or your honno^r of my opinion of the Carriage of the warr intended in the behalfe of the Prince Pallatinate, for it were pittey these busynesses should miscarry at the first, and it is easy to judge what wilbee the succeſſe, espetially if it bee knowne who are the vndertakers, and what provissons are made for it, for this is a maxime amongst men of warr, That such as are the enterprizers such wilbee the succeſſe of the enterprize, the knowledg whereof makes Princes of experience themſelues be choice of thoſe they employe: vnderſtanding that the Arte of warr is a miſtery; heard of by maney, practiced by ſome; vnderſtood by fewe; I ſay noe more referring to your wiſdome to Judge of the reſt, and to vouchſafe mee
the

the favour to acknowledge mee as one that desires to be esteemed.

Yo^r honno^{rs} humbly to serue you / FERD : GORGES.

LAUINGTON. 27^o february. 1636.

Add: To the hon^{ble} Sir John Coke Knight Principall Secretarie to the Kinges
most Excellent Ma^{tie} at Court present these. End: by Sir J. Coke. 1636
Feb 27. Sir Ferdinando Gorges frō lauington.

(Coke MSS.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR JOHN COKE.

SIR Att the meeting of the Justices this last Sessions the
inequallity of the Rates of the feuall hundreds for all pay-
ments were Complayned of, w^h desire of speedy reforma-
con, that for his Ma^{ties} Seruice (for all Leavies) might with
more ease bee borne, and the Complaints of the poorer sort
bee taken away. And although it were respectively im-
braced by all in a manner that were p^ſent, yet some two or
three questioned the same, as Conceauing it not fitt, nor in
the power of the Sessions to alter the former Orders setled,
although those orders were alluaies setled & resolved by
the same power; But finding those disputes likely to last
longer then it ought, I haue thought it a principall part of
my dutie to comēnd the same to yo^r Considera^ron, for that I
find it of noe small consequence, and doe wish that for the
more speedy dispatch thereof his Ma^{tie} might bee moved, to
giue order that Letters may be directed to the Lieuten-
nantes, and Justices to the same purpose, or that such other
course

course may bee taken therein as to theire Lo^{pps} wisdomes
shall bee found best for the publique seruice, and his Ma^{ties}
greate occasions. Soe Leaving the farther Considera \tilde{n} on
thereof to yo^r wisdome, I humbly take my Leave and rest

Yo^r honno^{rs} humbly to serue you / FERD: GORGES.

LAUINGTON 29^o Aprillis. 1637.

Add: To the Right hon^{ble} Sir John Coke knight, principall Secretary to his most
Excellent Ma^{tie} p^{re}sent these. End: by Sir J. Coke. 1637 April 29. S^r Fer-
din: Gorges.

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR HENRY VANE, JOHN WINTHROP,
AND OTHERS.

MAIE IT PLEASE You, Having receaved severall lettres from
my servant Vines, and others, of the generall dislike con-
ceaved against Mr. Cleeves, for having to doe with anie my
affaires, by reason (as it is affirmed) of the miscarriage of
him, as well towardes myselfe in particular, as the wronges
hee offered them by his misreports to mee of theire mis-
carriage in theire places, whereby hee hath intruded himselfe
into my good opinion soe far forth as to bee joyned with you
in matters of soe greate trust, being soe unworthey; which
complaint of theires hath so far forth prevailed with mee (if
it bee soe) as to desire your favourable excuse; and to give
my order to my servant Vines for the righting of mee, and
vindicating of himselfe, and the rest, taking an ordinary
course for the farther questioning thereof, and to proceed
therein according as it shalbee found of more or lesse con-
sequence, which I refer vnto your judgments (to whome hee
is to adrefse himselfe for justice) to censure as to you it
shall

shall feeme good, vpon a full hearing, and due prooffe made thereof. As for Vines, I know his honesty to bee such as I could not abandon him out of my affeccion, as formerly I haue written, yet I conceived it not amisse to rancke him with the rest in the generall discharge, that it might appeare there was noe partiallity vsed, nor respecte of persons, for therein I spared not my nephewe, whome I esteeme next my owne children.

As for Vines, I intend hee shall still continue Deputie Governour, and soe doe pray you to settle him as before hee was, and to joyne with him my nephewe Champernowne,⁶⁸¹ and such others as you shall receive notice to bee fitteſt for ſuch ſervice; that thereby you maie avoid the troubles you may otherwife bee put vnto, by the maney trobbles that maie arife ſoe farr diſtant from you. What reſteth more to bee done in this, I refer to your beſt reſolucions, as tyme and occaſion ſerves, wherein I feare I haue too much trenched vpon your favours. But my truſt is, as ſhall bee my endeavours, that I maie attaine to the opportunity to make you ſome kind of requittall, and that in ſome nature to your good likinges. In the meane while let mee tell you that being at London this laſt Terme, and daiely in Company with the Lordes, I heard nothing of the Commission Cleeves affuſed mee was afoote, contrary to the expeſtation I had thereof,

⁶⁷⁰ Francis Champernouſ, or perhaps more correctly, Champernowne, was of a diſtinguished Devonſhire family, and couſin to Sir Ferdinando Gorges, to whom he was a ſtanch friend and adherent through the troublous times which preceded the loſs to the Lord Proprietor of his Province of Maine.

He died at Kittery in 1687. For an extended account of him *vide Captain Francis Champernowne*, by Charles Wesley Tuttle, Esq., Ph.D. Edited by Albert Harrifon Hoyt, A.M., with a Memoir of the Author, by John Ward Dean, A.M. Boston, 1889.

thereof, vpon confidence of Mr. Cleeves reporte to mee. By which meanes I was (I fear mee drawne to abuse you vnwillingly) by my certificate in his behalfe. But a little to excuse him therein, for that it might bee he was perfwaded vpon such promises as Moorton his agent assured him, who since is wholy casheered from intermedlinge with anie our affaires hereafter; but this I write to you in particular that you maie take private notice thereof, and howe much I am offended with my selfe for being over credulous of another, neither needes it seeme strang it should bee soe, consideracion being had to the sincerity of one, and the fraude of others. But I will forbeare to fay more in this subiecte, and onely leave all to tyme and opportunity, desiring the affistance of the Most Highest to give me power to doe what shall make most for his glorie, and the publique good of his Church, to whose sacred proteccion I committ you, with the assurance that I will approve my selfe.

Your true friend, to serve you / FERDE: GORGES.

ASHTON PHILLIPES, 23^o Augustij, 1637.

Add: To my much respected freindes Henry Vane,⁶⁷¹ John Winthrop, John Haines,⁶⁷² John Humfrey, and John Dudley, Esquiers, give theis with speed.
Endorsed by Gov. Winthrop "S^r: ffer: Gorge." (Colonial

⁶⁷¹ Sir Henry Vane was a leader of the Independents, and a man of ideas far in advance of his time. On the restoration of the House of Stuart, every man in any degree instrumental in the death of Charles I. was marked for the scaffold, and Vane was one of these unfortunate victims. He was beheaded June 14th, 1662.

⁶⁷² The Rev. John Haynes came to this country with Cotton and others, arriving in Boston September 4th, 1633. He was chosen Governor of the colony in 1635. Cotton Mather, quoting from

an old manuscript, says: "To him is New England many ways beholden; had he done no more but stilled a storm of dissention which broke forth in the beginning of his government, he had done enough to endear our hearts unto him, and account that day happy when he took the reins of government into his hands." He removed to Connecticut, where he "took his turn with Mr. Edward Hopkins in being every other year the governor of that colony." He died in 1654.

(Colonial State Papers, Vol. X. No. 18.)

ANSWER TO ORDER OF REFERENCE RESPECTING CLAIMS
AGAINST SIR F. GORGES.

ACCORDING to yo^r Lo^{pps} Order of Reference of the 22th February 1638. directing us to examine & certifie whe[ther] the Promise of S^r Ferdinando Gorges to be an [adventurer] in equall proportion wth Cap^t John Mason, (whe[rein he] is charg'd wth the Arreare complained of to be [due] from him) did only relate to such Shipps as should [be] sett out & voyages made after his said Promise, [to] date in June 1632. or to the Shipps sett out [and] mentioned in the chertificate of S^r John W[ostenholme]⁶⁷³ & S^r Abraham Dawes,⁶⁷⁴ w^{ch} were before the date of said promise; or to both; Wee haue examined the same [and] fully heard the said S^r Ferd: Gorges in whatfoeū [he] could alleadge for him selfe, & doe finde that h[is afore]said promise made in June 1632. as aforesaid, ha[d] Relation to the Shipps sett out & voyages mentioned in the said Certificate of S^r John Wolstenholme & [S^r] Abraham Dawes w^{ch} were before the date of his said Prom[ise] And it appear'd clearly unto us that the Objection made by the said S^r Ferd: Gorges that his said Promise

⁶⁷³ Sir John Wostenholm was a wealthy merchant of London, and a member of the Virginia Company, his name appearing in the fecond charter of 1609. He identified himself in the Virginia enterprize, and was honored by having a town in the New World named for him, viz., "Wosten-Holmes Towne." He received the honor of knighthood on March 12th, 1616, and was subseqently

appointed to the office of a Farmer of the Customs, and in 1631 was made one of the Board of Commissioners for Virginia and the Caribbees. He manifested his zeal for religion by building a church at Stanmore, in Middlesex, where he was buried in 1639.

⁶⁷⁴ He was associate Commissioner for Virginia with Sir John Wostenholm.

Promise related only & was to be applied to such Shipps as were sett out & voyages made after his said Promise, was a meere sub[ter]fuge & altogether groundlesse, for that after his sai[d] promise made he paid in 100^l w^{ch} must necessarily [be] in relation to the Voyages & Shipps sett out before his said promise, in regard that since the date of his said Promise there hath not beene any Shipp sett out nor voyage at all made by the said Adventurers; Be[sides] it appear'd unto us, as well by the Register Booke [and by] M^r Eyres Clarke & Accountant for the said Comp[any] as by the Testimonies upon oath as well of the said M^r Ey[res] as of George Griffith ⁶⁷⁵ & Thomas Wannerton mch[ts] that the said S^r Ferd: Gorges did promise as af[oresaid] to be an Adventurer in all the Voyages sett [out by] the said Adventurers, in equall proporcon wth th[e said] Mason; As concerning the so^me of 254^l c[laimed] to be owing & in Arreare by the said S^r Ferdin[ando] (w^{ch} was ordered to goe towards the satisfaction [of] the wages & salaries due to the poore peticon^{rs}, [the only] Proofe thereof is the f^d Register Booke of Accounts [produced] by the said Eyres, attested by him upon oath to be a true Acc^t Upon all w^{ch} wee are of opinion that the said S^r Ferd: Gorges was in Arreare the said Su^me of 254^l (Whereof 10^l only hath beene by him paid, since the first

⁶⁷⁵ George Griffith was a merchant of London, and was associated with Sir William Alexander and others in the Canada expedition which set out November 6th, 1629, under the command of Kirke. Subsequently he was one of the associates in the Laconia Company, and was assigned a considerable tract of land in the territory which the Company held from the Council for New England.

He was the owner of the barque *Warwick*, and was interested in the commercial adventures which for some time were carried on with the New England settlements. Various references to him may be found in *Captain John Mason*, edited by John Ward Dean, A.M., Prince Society, Boston, 1887, pp. 54, 56, 64 *et passim*.

first Compt^t of the Peticon^{rs} to this Board.) Neūtheleffe in regard S^t Ferd: Gorges did object one pticular, whereby he endeauoured to disable the Testimony of the said Eyres, & the Credite of his Register booke; Wee haue at his Instance thought fitt to represent the same to yo^r Lo^{pps} viz^t That in a Cause lately depending in the Court of Requests betweene one Cotton Plaintiff, & S^t Ferd: Gorges & Henry Gardiner⁶⁷⁶ defend^{ts}, concerning the Soñe adventured by S^t Ferd: Gorges in a Fishing Voyage to New England; The question being? Whether his Adventure were 110^l or 50^l. It was (notwthstanding the Answer of the said Eyres upon oath to an Interogatory ministred on that behalfe, wherein he affirm'd that the Adventure of the said S^t Ferd: Gorges was 110^l) Resolu'd by the said Court that the said Adventure was only 50^l & soe order'd accordingly; a Copie of w^{ch} Depofic^{on} & Order he now produc'd before us; W^{ch} whether it may tend to the impeachm^t of the Testimony of the said Eyres or the Credite of his Register Booke of Accounts in the matters referr'd by yo^r Lo^{pps} to us wee presume not to judge, but humbly submit the same to yo^r Lo^{pps}, Only wee conceaue it fitt to acquainte yo^r Lo^{pps} likewise wth M^r Eyres his Answer thereunto; w^{ch} was, That the Court of Requests did not reject his Testimony there, in such a fence, as S^t Ferd:

⁶⁷⁶ Henry Gardiner was at an early period interested in colonial undertakings in the New World, if we may believe his son, who says that he "was one of the First Adventurers thither, and into other parts of America." He was a merchant, and was associated with Captain John Mason, "having lived long in the Oriental parts of the World,

almost as much Eastwards, as New England is Westwards." His colonial undertakings, however, ended disastroufly, in common with those of his associates. For particulars regarding him, *vide New England's Vindication*, edited by Charles Edward Banks, M.D., Gorges Society, Portland, 1884.

Ferd: Gorges now urges & would make use of, to disable his Testimony in other thinges, But that although the said order of Court, determin'd it otherwise then as he had deposed, yet the same was but according to the Course of all Courts, in regard there was but singularis Testis; And therefore humbly desired that in Case the said objection of S: Ferd: Gorges made any impression wth yo^r Lo^{pp}s that he might be heard to giue further Answer thereunto.

ABRA: WILLIAMS.⁶⁷⁷

WILL: BECHER.⁶⁷⁸

FRANCIS WYATT.⁶⁷⁹

LAUR: WHITTAKER.⁶⁸⁰

THO: MEAUTYS.⁶⁸¹

End: S: Ferd: Gorges.

(Colonial

⁶⁷⁷ Sir Abraham Williams was Secretary to Sir Ralph Winwood, Ambassador in Holland, who left him at the Hague in August, 1613, in charge of important busines of state. He was the agent of the Elector and Electress Palatine, afterwards King and Queen of Bohemia, and was knighted at Whitehall by the King, April 22d, 1625, "after his happie comeinge to the Crowne." He was Clerk of the Signet in 1636.

⁶⁷⁸ William Beecher was Clerk of the Privy Council. He was made Sir William on July 29th, 1619.

⁶⁷⁹ Sir Francis Wyatt, elected Governor of Virginia by the Virginia Company of London, January 31, 1620, was descended from a noted family whose estates had been confiscated in the sixteenth century, but which had subsequently been restored to them. With his wife Margaret, the amiable daughter of Sir Samuel Sandys, and a considerable retinue of servants, he arrived at

Jamestown in the ship *George*, in October, 1621. The next year after the death of his father, which took place in 1625, he returned to England in order to settle his estate. In 1639 he was again elected Governor of Virginia, but did not long retain the office, in which he was succeeded by Governor Berkeley. Shortly after resigning the governorship he returned to his home in Bexley, Kent, where he died, August 24th, 1644.

⁶⁸⁰ Laurence Whitaker was a member of Parliament in 1640. Subsequently he was one of those who signed the protestation at the trial of the unfortunate Earl of Strafford.

⁶⁸¹ Thomas Meautys was the Clerk of the Privy Council, and for his faithful service to the Crown was rewarded, on March 26th, 1636, by having bestowed upon him for life the office of Muster Master-General of England.

(Colonial Papers, Vol. IX. No. 116.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SECRETARY WINDEBANK.

S^r: I shall not neede to use manie reasons to yo^r: Hono^r: to prove the consequnce of mainteininge & supportinge forreigne plantaⁿons; in that, yo^r: hono^r: knowes, by those meanes manie famous Coⁿmonwealths have bine raised, manie countries established to the discovero^{rs} & without it noe assurance of greate Territories can be had Soe did the Romans in Germanie, such hath bine the practise of the Spaniard of later yea^res, and such are the designes of the French and Dutch at this p^rsent; well knoweinge, that nothinge adds more glorie and greatenesse to anie nation, then the enlargement of theire Territories the multiplyinge of theire subjects, & the increase of Trade and Coⁿmerce; which alwaies bringes wth it encrease of shippinge and mariners; matters, this kingdome of all others hath most reason to be carefull of, in that, our safetie doth much consiste therein. To omitt the miseries that follow the mightie warres devas- tations and spoiles dailie practised, for the conqueringe of places, and securitie of principalities; w^{ch} these forreigne plantations may performe without bloud or charge to the Publique.

But perhaps it may be objected, that manie of our planters have undertaken these designes rather out of seditious, phantasticall and schismaticall humo^{rs}: then out of zeale to the hono^r: of God or service to his Ma^{tie}:

Whereunto I humbly aunswere; that if it be soe, yet the hono^r: ,

hono^r: his Mātie is like to receive thereby, can be noe leffe then is due to soe greate a prince posseſt of ſuch Territories. As for theire ſchismaticall humo^rs, ſeldome doth anie prince abandon people or leave the poſſeſſion of kingdomes for thoſe cauſes; but rather ſeeks to winne them with the laſteſt condiſons of all favour and freedome.

That in caſe (which God forbiſt) his Mātie ſhould abandon theſe deſignes can there be anie doubt made but that they will endeavo^r to ſuſtene of themſelves, or adhere to ſuch other ſtates as ſhall be willinge to entertaine them and (in caſe of neceſſitie) administer to them all ſupplies reuiſite for the reliefe of theire diſtrefſes; were it but to p̄vent the maniſte groweinge of his Māties greatneſſe by ſoe viſible a meaneſ as his forreigne plantations p̄miſte to all; whoſe growth to ſoe greate perfeſſion in ſoe ſhorte a time may well be admiſed.

And it may be ſuſpoſed, that the multitudes of people goeinge from hence & tranſportinge corne & other proviſions with them raiſe the prizes of them here.

To this I aunſwere that (were they altogetheſ furnished from hence) theire fuſtenance conſiſtes in a like proportion at home as abroad but, the poorer ſorte goe alwaies provided onelie for the time of theire tranſportaſon, hopeinge, by theire labo^rs there, to gaine at eaſier rates theire viſtualls; whoſe comeinge unprovided of meaneſ hath in times of more want bine occaſion of muſterie.

Next it may be inquired, what coſmodities come from thence for the preſent to his Mātie /

To which it is aunſwered; that, lookeinge into the number of ſhippes which are everie yeare imploied that waie, it will eaſilie

easlie appeare what they returne to his Mātie both by ex-
portation & importation: and if in soe few yeares & hindred
by soe manie wants soe greate profitt be returned; what will
thoſe profitts be when thoſe plantations be growne to more
mature perfection; and when they ſhall be able upon the
receipte of English comodities, in like manner, to refurniſh
the merchaunts, with Flaxe, hempe, pitch, tarre, roſin, & dele
(naturall coſmodities of thoſe parts) as they haue alreadie,
with great quantities of fish, maſts, pipeſtaves, & Clapboard,
ſent into Spaine & the Islands of Canarœ and Medera for
which there are returned coſmodities yieldinge Good custome
And noe doubt but there are other profitts to be raifed when
once the planters ſhall have ſtrength & meanes to ſearch
for them; which theire owne benefitt and neceſſitie will
enforce them unto. How manie hopes depend on theſe
plantaſons beſides, is knowne, to thoſe of expeſience and
juđgment in ſtate-affaires; which were the motives induc-
inge Queene Eliz: and his late Mātie of bleſſed memorie
ſoe willingly to favoř ſuch enterprizes: But as in all other
works of moment, ſoe in this, the happinesse conſiſteth in a
conſtant continuation of the well manageinge thereof till it
be brought to its height of pfection.

Yet I conceiue the greateſt queſtion, to be, by what
meanes thoſe refractorie people may be drawne to ſub-
mitte themſelves to a generall governoř:, whereby his
Mātie may the better be auſſured of theire perpetuall
continuance in obediance to him and his Succeffors.

Whereunto (preſumeinge on yoř: Honořs fauoř:) I aunſwere;
that if the lords, to whom the ſeverall provinces are aſſigned,
would be pleased, (accordinge to theire former reſolutions,)

to settle theire deputies and officers with some power, it would soe much the better be accomplished: But for the present I humbly tender to your hono^{rs} confideraⁿon how expedient it will be to dire^ct a Co^mission to the proprie^to^rs of some one province (not yet pesterd with such people as are like to refuse any authoritie sent from hence to co^mand them :) wherein may be joined, some that shall accompanie him in the imployment, and others, of the most discrete and temperate sorte resident in New-Englan^d: giveinge them power to examine the state of the Countrie, & to inquire by what meanes it may best be ordered for the quiett peace and content of the planters that shall live under his M^āties obedience.

By the same meanes may a generall Co^mission be sent for the settl^{ng}e of a Governo^r: wth other Officers of State; but with instructions, not to divulge or putt the same in execution untill he find some certaintie of willingnesse in the strongest partie to seconde the authoritie thereof.

Which Co^mission must be soe ample & free for the grauntinge of all reasonable immuniti^{es} to that kind of people, as that, they may be putt out of all feare of loofeinge what they in present possesse. (it beinge conceived, consideration beinge had to the premisses, better any condicⁿon graunted then that land and people should be loste.

This course beinge taken; yet the effectinge thereof will not be without extraordinarie charge and difficultie to the person to be employed therein; & soe much the more, in that, manie of those formerly resolved to runne the fortune of such an undertaker are now fallen of, & have otherwise disposed of themselves out of despaire of the worke; seeinge the

the number & strength of that people soe much increased. Therefore his Mātie may be pleased to make such an allowance unto him for the transportacon of himselfe & the rest of the Coñissioners with theire retinue, as may be competable; and it will be all the charge his Mātie needes to be at for the performance of the service; for if they will accepte of a governour there will be meanes found for the maintenance of him, & future defrayment of all publique charge; in that, they doe alreadie of themselves raiſe stocks to the like ends; & with favour and authoritie from his Matie they will doe much more: how necessarilie such favo^r: should be bestowed on them may be conceived by that little which hath bine said.

Thus much I thought good humbly to pſent to yo^r: hono^{rs} confideraçon that you may please to make use thereof to the lords (in my behalfe) as your hono^r: in your wisedome shall thinke fitt, for his Māties better service: my ſelfe beinge unable to give that attendance as I in duty ought. Humbly defireinge, that by yo^r hono^{rs} meanes I may ſpeedily receive knowledge of theire lordſhipps coñounds, & returne to mine owne house with hope the ſooner to recover my health. So ſhall I reſt

Yo^r: Hono^{rs} most humbly to be coñaundered /

FERDE: GORGES.

End: 20 Iune: 1638 / Sir Ferdinando Gorges. Trade.

(Colonial

(Colonial Papers, Vol. X. No. 56.)

PETITION OF SIR F. GORGES TO THE PRIVY COUNCIL.

To the right hono^{ble} the lords of his Matie's most hono^{ble}
privie Counsell.

The humble peticon of S^r Ferde: Gorges Kn^t
Shewinge /

That, Whereas the necessitie of his particular affaires in New-England requires that he should speedilie send over thither, for the better settlinge of his estate, and reformation of the disorders amongst them; as alsoe, for that there are many tenants, undertakers and inhabitants (beinge persons obedient and conformable to the orders of this church) that are to goe thither; who, by reason of a proclama^con for a generall restraint of any to goe without licence, are now stayed to the greate daunger of the ruine of them and theire families; in considera^con hereof, it is humbly desired, that your Lo^{pps} will be pleased to give him leave to sett forth from Bristol (where he dwells) such shippinge as shall be necessarie for his and his private friends uses that shall be willinge to joine with him for the better plantinge and orderinge those parts belonging unto him:

And he shall dailie pray &c:

FERDE: GORGES.

Nihil /

(Colonial

(Colonial Papers, Vol. X. No. 93.)

PETITION OF SIR F. GORGES TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS FOR FOREIGN PLANTATIONS.

To the Right Hoñ^{ble} the Lords Com^{rs} for forraigne Plantaçons.

The humble declaraçon of S^r Fardinando Gorges k^t

MAY IT PLEASE YO^R Lo^{pps} / Haueinge faithfully endeavoured for many Yeares togeather, (to the expence both of my time & fortunes) by what meanes I might best serve his Ma^{tie} and Conceaveinge theare could bee nothinge more advantagious to his Honour, and happines of his People, then the enlargem^t of his Dominions, the encrease of trade, and the advancem^t of Navegaçon, I perswaded my selfe it could noe way bee better accomplished then by Plantaçon; Wheruppon I was one of the first that sett theis employm^{ts} a foote, and haue seduloufly entended the Care therof to this Very p^ſsent, wth confidence of a gratiouſ acceptaçon from his Ma^{tie} for my zeale therin, w^{ch} to my great encouagm^t I haue alwaies found in a plentifull measure, But now findinge age to haue oñtaken mee, Soe that I cannott follicit your Lo^{pps} wth that diligence that becomes mee I most humbly desire that this my Nephew Luttrell ⁶⁸³ may bee instead of mee to attend yo^r Lo^{pps} Resoluçons touchinge a Petiçon p^ſented by my selfe about the end of June last to his Ma^{tie} at Greenw^{ch} and by him Recomended to Yo^r Lo^{pps} for

⁶⁸³ This is probably Thomas Luttrell, Esq., of Dunster, whose wife was the daughter of Sir Francis Popham. He died in 1647. Dunster Castle is still the property of the Luttrells.

for a dispatch therof, And that it would please yo^r good Lo^{pps} to call for M^r Atturney genall: with whome the busines Remaynes, And that the Councell assinged to attend yo^r Lo^{pps} therin may enforme yo^r Lo^{pps} of the state therof, that soe it may haue a dispatch accordinge to the order yo^r Lo^{pps} shalbee pleased to give.

FERD: GORGES.

End: S^r ferdinando Gorges.

(Colonial State Papers, Vol. X. No. 55.)

SIR F. GORGES TO SIR F. WINDEBANK.

S^r hauinge receaued lres out of New England I perceave had I not obteyned the graunte I lately gott from his Ma^{ty}. I should not haue beene M^r of more then I occupied wth my servants, and those entrusted by me in that parte my house standes in (the rest beinge challenged som by one right som by another) and som of those flyeinge to the Governo^rs of the Bay for Authority to order theire affayers (as if they alone were the supreame lordes of that parte of the worlde) and therefore howe I shall speed in my Resolu^{con} to make good his Ma^{ts} Royall graunte, God that onely Governes all actions knowes: But havinge his Ma^{ts} gratiouſe favo^r there is noethinge shall deter me from my Attempt to make his power availeable where I haue his Warrant to doe it, besides all this I heare there wilbe great workeinge by som of theire Agents and freinds to stay me from prosecutinge my intents suspectinge (as it feemes) that his Ma^{ty} may make use of me in tyme to Regulate what is found to be amisse as fortinge wth his hono^r and Wisdom to satisfie thos that hopes and prayes

prayes for it, as alsoe for that it is known to all to be a principle of state not to loose what may be kept that may any wayes prove advantageous in future tymes for profit or service, and for the p̄sent of noe meane Employment for Shipps and subiects that wantes or makes use of it. This much I thought fitt in dischardge of my duety to comend to yo^u hono^{rs} further consideraⁿon howe necessary it is his Ma^{ty} and theire lo^{ps} should haue knowledge hereof, to the end there may be som tymely course taken to p̄vent the worst that may be looked for here after, Although I haue a purpose my selfe not to take shippinge before I humbly p̄sent my selfe to his Ma^{ty} and theire Lo^{ps} to receaue theire comaunds and to putt soemuch thereof in Execuⁿon as lyes in the power of an humble servant and faithfull subiect to doe, that covetts noethinge more in this worlde then the hono^r of his Soveraigne and prosperity of his Nation, Wittnes all my actions in the whole course of my life to this p̄sent/ Not further to trouble yo^r hono^r but that I will ever acknowledge my selfe

Yo^r hono^{rs} humble servant to be comaunded /

FERD: GORGES.

ASHTON this 28th of January 1639.

End: To the Right hono^{bly} S^r Frauncis Windebanke knight Principall Secretary to his most Excellent Ma^{ty} p̄sent these / 28. Janu: 1639. S^r Ferd: Gorges.

SIR F. GORGES TO JOHN WINTHROP.

WORTHY SIR,— The soddain approach of our longe wished for Parliament inuites me to attend the happy issue therof, that otherwise had a resolution to haue visited you this

this springe, but I haue sent a neer kinsman of mine own name, with other necessary seruants, for the better orderinge of my affaires, & makinge of my prouision agaynst the time it shall please God I come my selfe. In the mean while I am bould to intreat of you to seconde this my cosen Gorges in any just and reasonable occasion he shall haue cause to vse your fauor in, I hauinge giuen him command to be carefull to doe his best that all fayr correspondecny be maintayned between those two feuerall Plantations, as a speciall means, by Gods fauor, to giue furtherance to the happinesse therof; and when God shall be pleased that I may arriue, I doubt not but you shall perceave my greatest ambition shall tend (next to the seruice of God) by what wayes or means an vnion or conformity of all parties may be established, or at the least a patient or charitable bearinge with each others errors or selfe affexions, that soe our Souerainge Lord the Kinge may be ashewred of our subiections, the publique be not disturbed, the common course of justice made free, and the countries defenses prouided for; which worke beinge finished, I shall willingly commend my selfe ready to giue an account of all my actions to Him that is only able to forgiue all our offenses, and giues vs ashewrances of His mercies through the sufferances of His blessed Son, our only Sauiour Jesus Christ, to whose sacred & gracious assistance I commend you and all your endeouours, and to whom I wish as becommeth

Your very louinge frend /

FERDE: GORGES.

ASHTON, March 26, 1640.

Add : To the Worshipfull & my much respected frend, John Wintrupp, Esqr, at Boston in the Bay, these present. End: by Gov. Winthrop: Sir Fferdinand Gorges, Resp. per the Desire.

(Add.

(Add. MSS. 18,980, fol. 98.)

SIR F. GORGES TO THE KING.

S^r. The troopes beinge dispatched to the West it is conceived their proceedings in theose parts will give a faire opportunitie to your Highnesse to prosecute the designe soe longe aimed at, in that all the forces the enemy can possibly procure wil be drawne to make head against them, Least they loose the domination of theose countries by which they are nowe supported.

With what facilitie it may be effected if your Highnesse can advance but 3000 foote & 2000 horse to the accomplishments of the service wil be made manifest upon the examination of the plott thereof with the waies & passages beloninge unto it which I have brought of purpose to give your Highnesse a full satisfaction of everie particular, that soe you may proceede with the more assurance and the plainer give order what everie one is to doe & how to behave himselfe in the execution thereof whereby the distractions may be the better avoided which manie times attende such designes & will the better Confirm the mindes of the assailants whoe shall see beforehande what they are to obserue and be attended with sufficient guides to bringe them to their severall places they are assignd with order to proceede accordinge to your Highnesses directions.

That the Governour hath enlarged his defences of late is certaine & therewth made himselfe lesse able to make good the guardes soe farre distant from him, and to assure other places soe easie to come by without danger of what is done

to prevent it Howe much such a piece of service will advance the publique, distracte the enemie & glorifie you for your celeritie & wisdome in layeinge holde of such an occasion that opens the passage to finish the trubles of theose distressed countries, & advances the meanes to ende our generall miseries. I leave till the worke be finished as I doe the whole to your Highnesses better consideration & knowledge of what may be proper for the present, with relation to other the Kings necessities, or spectiall occasions, even soe commendeinge your Highnesse to Gods sacred protection restinge in all dutifull obedience

Your Highnesses humblie to serve you /

FERDE: GORGE.

End: F. Gorge. 43 or 44.

(Add. MSS., British Museum, 15,857, fol. 257.)

SIR F. GORGES TO FERDINAND, LORD FAIRFAX.

My NOBLE LORD. I was very ioyful to heare by S^r John Paulett of your Lor^{ps} health and well beinge specially that you were pleased to call to memory our ancient acquaintance with your Noble desire to afford me your comfort in these my untimely sufferances whose affections as you may please to beleeve neuer swayed me farther then became an obedient servante only careful of my Countries happines and yet fearfull to side with either party as not able to judge of soe transcendent a difference, but sorrowing in the highest degree to finde such a separation threateninge soe much the rewen of all which God I hope hath timely prevented by guidinge his

his Ma^{tie} to the happie aduice of his greatest Councells whose wisdomes (under God) is only able to reestablish some part of the happines we once enioyed which God in mercie grante that I may have the happineſſ to attend your Lor^{ps} ſolely to give you accounte how I have paſt my time in theſe ſadd ſeafons and to tell that there is nothinge in my power that is not your Lor^{ps} to diſpoſe of, in that I am not only a debtor to your Lor^p for your care to be helpfull to me but to your thrice Honrd ſonne for his ready acceſtation of my ſubmiſſion and favourable care I ſhould receive noe wronge while he ſtayed in theſe partes and (as I have hearde) his well takeinge, what hath ſince bin offered me theſe are the cordes that tieſ me to affiſſe your Lor^{ps} I ſhall ever be

My Lorde. Your Lor^{ps} humble ſervant /

FE: GORGES.

ASHTON June the 1st 1646.

Add: To the Right Honourable my much Honourde Lord the Lord Fairfax ⁶⁸⁴
theſe preſente. End: S^r Fer: Gorge 1 June 1646.

⁶⁸⁴ Ferdinand, Lord Fairfax, was a general of the Parliamentary army, and in the battle of Selby, April 11th, 1644, completely overthrew the Royalists, for which a general thanksgiving was or-

dered by Parliament. He was made Governor of York and the Northern Counties after the victory, and died while holding this office, March 13th, 1647.





COMMISSION OF FERDINANDO GORGES TO
FRANCIS CHAMPERNOUN, HENRY
JOSSELYN, ET ALS.

JUNE 21ST, 1664.





COMMISSION OF FERDINANDO GORGES TO
FRANCIS CHAMPERNOON, HENRY
JOSSELYN, ET ALS.

JUNE 21ST, 1664.

(York Records.)



O all Christian People to whom these Presents shall come I Ferdinando Gorges of the City of Westm^r. Lord Proprietor of the Province of Mayne in New England in America send Greeting. Whereas our late Sovereign King Charles the First of blessed memory by his Charter Royall under the Great Seal of England bearing Date the Third Day of Aprill in the Fifteenth Year of his Reign did grant & confirme unto S^r Ferdinando Gorges Knight Dec^d & unto his Heirs & Assigns for ever all that Part & Portion of Land in New England in America which by the f^d. Letters Patents is bounded by the Rivers of Pascataway & Sagadahok the f^d. Rivers being included with the Extent of One Hundred and Twenty Miles up into the Main Land with severall Islands adjacent to the f^d. main Land & the Rivers & Shores thereof

as

as also the Islands of Capawick & Nautican near Cape Codd w^{ch} Island of Capawick is since called Martins Vineyard all w^{ch} Premisses are by the f^d. Charter Royall entituled the Province of Mayne in New England in America, and by ye same Charters are not only granted the Fee of the f^d. Lands to the f^d. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges his Heirs & assigns for ever, But also the perpetuall Government thereof saving only the Faith & Allegiance to the Crowne of England by w^{ch} Charter is also granted to the f^d. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges, all the Powers, Rights, Franchisses, Immunities, Royalties & Priviledges w^{ch} of Right apperteyne & are enjoyed or ought to be enjoyed by the Bishop of Duresme in the County Palatine of Duresme: with severall other Royalties Priviledges & Immunities in such large & ample Manner as gave Testimony of a singular Favour in his f^d. Majestie to the f^d. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges as by the f^d. Charter Respect being thereunto had may & doth at Large appear.

And whereas upon the Decease of the f^d. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges the Right, Tytle & Interest of the f^d. Province did lawfully descend & come unto John Gorges Esq^r. Eldest Sonne & Heire of the f^d. S^r. Ferdinando Gorges. And whereas upon the Decease of the f^d. John Gorges the Right Title & Interest to the f^d. Province did lawfully descend and come unto me the f^d. Ferdinando Gorges only Son & Heire of the f^d. John Gorges. Now Know yee that I the f^d. Ferdinando Gorges reposing Trust & Confidence in my loving Friends Capt. Francis Champernoon neer Brabot Harbour, Henry Jofflin of Black Point, John Archdale, Robert Jordan of Spurwinck, Thomas Purchas of Pegipscott, Francis Neale of Casco Bay, Francis Hooke of Saco, Henry Watts of Blew Point,

Point, Edward Rishworth of Gorgiana, Joseph Bowles of Wells, Francis Raynes near Brabot Harbour, Robert Cutts of Kittery & Thomas Withers of Pascataway Gentleman all Inhabitants & Residents within the f^d. Province have constituted & appointed & by these Prefents do constitute & appoint them the f^d. Capt. Fran. Champernoon Hen. Jofflin John Archedale Robt. Jordan Tho. Purchas Fran. Neale Francis Hooke Hen. Watts Edw. Rishworth Jos. Bowles Fran. Raynes Robt. Cutts & Tho. Withers to be during my Will & Pleasure my Deputies & Comissioners for the Government of the f^d. Province hereby empowering them or the maj^r. Part of them, or the Major Part of the Survivors of them to do & execute all such Authorities & Powers as by ye f^d. Letters Patents are to be done & executed by my Lieutenant or Lieutenants Deputie or Deputies.

Provided that in all such their Actings they proceed according to the Charter aforementioned, & the Instructions herewith sent & by me signed & sealed & according to such further Instructions as they shall from Time to Time receive from me, hereby ratifying & confirming all w^{ch} shall be lawfully done by my f^d. Deputies or Comissioners in Pursuance of this my Authoritie. Provided alwaies & my Intent & Meaning is that as soon as any other Comission being hereafter signed & sealed by me my Heirs or Assigues shall arrive & be publickly declared in the said Province that then this Comission shall cease & be noe further acted upon.

But all the Authoritie herein granted to cease & the supream Authoritie & Government of the f^d. Province under me to devolve upon such Persons as shall by such new Comission be thereunto appointed.

Given under my Seal this One & Twentieth Day of June
in ye Sixteenth year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord
Charles the Second by the Grace of God King of England,
Scotland France & Ireland Defender of the Faith &c
Annoq Dom. 1664

Instructions appointed by me Ferdinando Gorges Lord
Proprietor of the Province of Mayne in New England in
America to be obſerved by the Deputies or Commissioners
who by a Commission bearing Date with these Prefents are
by me appointed & commiſſioned to mannage the Affairs of
the f^d Province.

Imprimis you are to publish his Majesties gracious Order
herewith ſent & also the Proclamation herewith by me ſent
which is to be done in the ſeveral moft publick Parts of the
f^d Province & to give Notice to the Inhabitants thereof that
as they will anſwer the Contrary at their utmoft perills, they
do henceforth forbear to obey any Order from any Perfons
pretending a Right to govern the f^d Province or any Part
thereof, but that they do in all things ſubmit themſelves to
be governed by you as my Lieutenants & Deputies.

2. You are to uſe your Endeavours that untill Laws can
be made & eſtablished for ye Governm^t of the f^d Province
the Lawes & Customes formerly uſed in the f^d Province
before the late Civil Warres of England be again obſerved
& put in Practice ſoe as they are as neer as may be agree-
able to the Lawes of this Realme of England.

3. You are also deſired to get into your Poſſeſſion as ſoon
as may be, all ſuch Papers, Writings, Records, Books, Rent
Rolls & Evidences as heretofore either before my Couſin
Thomas Gorges his Coming to England or ſince, have been
in

in the Hands of any Person whatsoever & the same being in your Custody appoint to be kept in some safe Place by such Person as shall be by you chosen Register for Keeping a Record of all your Actings & Proceedings.

4. You are in Imitation of his gracious Majesty amongst your selves & the Inhabitants of the f^d. Province to put into perpetual Oblivion as I myself do the Actings of all such as have been heretofore any Waies instrumentall in those Addresses made to the Governors of ye Bay at Boston upon which Addresses & Petition they took upon them the Government of the f^d. Province, which I am more ready to look upon as the Influence of the Disorders of the late Tymes than any Disaffection to me by Reason that before the Tyme of such Petitioning my Predecessors for appearing for his late Majesty in the late unhappy Warres of England were great Sufferers here, & the peaceable enjoyment of those Provinces much disturbed by some Persons here, who being potent with the prevailing Powers although Strangers to the affairs of New England never having disbursed One Peny there were so dishonorable as to endeavour the Taking away of that from me in ye Planting whereof my Predecessors had spent very considerable Sums of Money. And I shall in this Particular only make this Addition that by Obliviating I do not only mean the Passing by of what is past but that any such Persons who were instrumental as above mentioned be as capable of bearing office or any other Kindness as any other Inhabitant of the f^d. Province.

5. You are with my great Seal w^{ch}. I have herewith sent you to be used as my Seal for judicial Affairs to sign & grant Comissions or Patents to such & so many Persons as you

you shall find necessary for Mainteyning the Courts of Jurisdiction which have heretofore been usually kept within the f^d. Province for Administration of Justice between as well me & any of the Inhabitants as between Party & Party according to Law & a good Conscience in w^{ch}. Administration of Justice you are to endeavour & take Order according to the best of your Skill that there be as much as may be an obseruation had of the Laws & Usages in his Majesty's Dominion of England & Power given to the f^d. Judges to Administer Oaths when necessary in the Execution of their office.

6. You are also desired to as soon as conveniently may be to proceed to ye Choice of a Colonel to command the Trayn^d. Bands of the f^d. Province & such Person as shall be so by you chosen to comissionate by Comission under the f^d. great Seal for one whole year next ensurring & empower & comissionate him to act according to such Instructions as he shall from Tyme to Tyme receive from me & for want of such Instructions from me then to act according to such Instructions as he from Tyme to Tyme receive from your selves or the Major Part of You or the major Part of the Survivors of you & as to all other military officers as Captains & all under officers you are also to give them Comissions for one year now next ensuing [& if you think it convenient let them be sealed] with the lesser Seal w^{ch} I have herewith sent you & in such Comissions you are to enjoyn them to observe such Orders as they shall from Tyme to Tyme receive from their superior officers.

7. You are also desired to have a special Regard to preserve the Right & Tytle of all Persons to any Lands Tenem^{ts} or Hereditan^{ts} lawfully claimed by Grants from S^r. Ferdinando

nando Gorges my Grandfather or John Gorges Esq^r my Father or by any Power lawfully deriving Authority from them but if any Persons do claim any Tytle to Lands by Virtue of any Grants not made either by my Father or Grandfather & not recorded in ye Publick Records of the f^d Province then & in such Case I do expect that ye order hereafter mentioned be obserued viz That all such Persons enter their Claims with you publickly upon Record at some Time within Six Months after y^r Receipt hereof of w^{ch} publick Notice may be taken by all Persons of this Perticular, I desire you soon after the Receipt hereof at several Times & Places convenient to sumon all Persons herein concerned to appear before you to make their particular Claims except such as are by you or some of you known to have clear & undoubted Tytles to ye Lands & Tenements by them posseſſed.

8. You are also desired as soon as may conveniently be after ye Receipt hereof to give Notice to all Persons who are in Possession of Lands & Tenements to w^{ch} they have no Tytle neither from me nor my f^d Ancest^{rs} that they may make their Addresses to you for the making of Contracts for such Lands as they now posſeſſ in which you shall obſerve this Method That is to ſay Each Person ſhall give a Perticular in Writing of ye Quantity of Lands by him posſeſſed & of what Nature it is how long he hath been posſeſſed of the ſame & if upon his or their becoming posſeſſed thereof they become obliged to pay any Rent to any who have had or pretended to have the Governm^t of the f^d Province or any Part thereof during the late Tymes of Diford^r

Then what ſuch Rent was & what Rent or Acknowledg-
ment

ment he is now willing to pay & what Covenants to come under to me as Lord Proprietor of the f^d Province which you are with yo^r Advice thereupon in Nature of a Conditional Contract to transferre unto me for my Consent & Aprobation upon Return whereof from hence a Grant is to be made to such Person or Persons so claiming under the great Seal herewith sent you & Copies of the respective Grants entered upon Record in ye Court of Chancery.

9. You are also desired as soon as any Persons now not in Possession of any Lands Tenements or Hereditaments do desire to become Tenants for any of the Lands of ye f^d Province as yet both uninhabited & undisposed of you are to receive their Proposals in writing of such Lands as they are willing to take & upon what Terms with your Advice thereupon by Way of Conditional Contract & to certifie ye same to me for my Allowance or Consent upon ye Return whereof from hence under my Hand & Seal a Grant is to be by you made under my great Seal & recorded in Chancery as is prescribed in the precedent Article.

10. You are desired to make Inhibition & Defence to all Persons who intend to become Tenants for any of ye Lands of ye f^d Province that before they have made such Contracts with you they do forbear to make Purchase of the pretended Tytle of any of the Sagamores or Indians w^{ch} is derogatory to the Grant to me made by his f^d late Majesty but after Contract made wth you then if they be willing it is very acceptable to me that they give somewhat to the adjacent Sagamore or Native for their Consent so as it be no considerable Summ because although this be not the Practice of other Nations yet the English by so doing & other their good Deportment have

have gained much upon the affection of ye Natives some of them induced not only to imitate us in Civility but also to embrace the Christian Religion.

11. You are also desired by all Means to take Care as much as in you lyes that no Injurie be done to any of the Native Indians of the Country but rather by all Humanity & Justness in Dealing to winn them to a familiar & friendly Neighborhood in Order to prevailing with them to a higher yea the most honorable of all Designs their Embracing the Christian Religion to w^{ch} End I shall make it my earnest Endeavour that of the Revenue here settled for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England a small Proportion may be designed for your Management in that Province.

12. You are desired to take Care as much as in you lyes that there be a Forbearance of Wasting of Timber in the f^d. Province I am informed y^t some of the Inhabitants of the f^d. Province do at their Pleasure in severall Places of the Province fell vast Quantities of Timber as if they were the Lord Proprietors of the f^d. Province or rather as if there were no such Thing as a Proprietor of the f^d. Province. I confess it may be very prejudicial to men who are in a way of Trade to be all at once put to a Stop in their Commerce yet I can not so much forget my self as not to desire you to take some better Care herein and as long as it shall be with some Reasonableness they may be tolerated to go on in Felling Tymber yet why particular Persons should receive an Advantage out of that in which they have no Proprietary & not make some Acknowledgment to the Proprietor I can not understand but leave it to your Discretions to give some reasonable & moderate Order herein.

13. You are also desired as soon as conveniently you can after Receipt hereof to inform your selves by all waies & Means how Trading may be erected in the 1st Province & it being here affirmed by those that know the Province & are well wishers to the Advancement of it that it is conveniently situated for Trade & that if some one of the best Ports were pitched upon & made a Magazin or Store House for the Province so as the Goods & Comodities which the Country & Coasts thereof afford might be there laden & transported & by the same way of Merchandize & the Keeping of Store Houses there for Goods to arrive at immediately from England to be there disposed of to ye Inhabitants of the 1st Province & Parts adjacent it would be a great Means to relieve the Inhabitants from ye great Inconveniency they are at by being forced to carry their Goods to the Bay of Boston & there also to buy at Second or Third Hand all such Goods of these Parts as are necessary for them as Cloath Linen Utensils for Fishing & ye like in Order to which I am promised in ye Spring the assistance of some Persons who will joyn in a Stock & make a Tryall to settle Trade there wherein I shall want your Advice. Its the opinion of some that some Port in the Middle of the Province will be most convenient for the whole Province but it is the opinion of others that Pascattaway River is ye most convenient & that it being a Place unto w^{ch} Trading is already some what fixed it's far more easy to increase & carry on a Trade there than to begin it in another Port it being found by long Experience that it's hard to put a Force upon Trade & it's believed that what's lost by being so far from the Center of the Province will be gained by the Vicinity of that Corner of the County which

which lieth to ye westward of Piscataway in order to w^{ch}. Affair I am in Hopes by ye Spring to Interest my self in a person fit with your Assistance to manage both ye Government & Trade of that Province a Man of Experience in Business & to be entrusted by those who put in their Shares into our small Beginnings from hence which Trade shall be so ordered that any Person in the Province shall if he desire it be interested though but in a small Proportion our Design being to make Trade the Common Interest of the whole Province which is the more easie in Regard that as I am informed Fish & other Food as also Tymber for Barbadoes, & those other hot Places with the Trade in Claw Boards for Spayne are the most considerable Trade that New England Affords for Exportation; Concerning this Affair I have also mentioned somthing in a Letter to which I desire there may be proper Respect given.

14. You are also desired to inform your selves by the Natives or any other waies you can whether there be any mineral Stone such as is like to produce Tynne Copper or Lead & if there be any other you judge may be of such a Nature pray by the next convenient Shipping send to me some of those Stones made up in a Box, I desire also one word of Information whe[ther there has in the Pro]vince or Parts adjacent been any Tryall for making of Pott Ashes & with what success.

15. You are also desired & empowered to call to Account all such Persons & the Heires Exec^{rs} & Admin^{rs} of all such Persons to whose Hands hath at any Time come any [part] of the psonal Estate of S^r Ferdinando Gorges my Grand-father, And for your better Information in this Particular I

have herewith sent you a Copie of the Particular Account my Cousin Thomas Gorges gave me of Part of the Stock & Commodities he left with severall Persons upon my Grandfathers Account at his coming from thence ye Tenth Day of July 1643.

16. You are also hereby empowered in the Constitution of Officers to administer Oaths where you judge it convenient which Oath I appoint to be in this Forme viz. To execute the office whereunto they are chosen according to the best of their Skill & Ability You are also impowered for the Finding out of the Truth in all Cases w^{ch} shall come before you to administer an oath to any Person or Persons from Time to Tyme as the Case shall require.

17. You are desired at some convenient Tyme after the Receipt hereof to convene together some particular Persons or Deputies from each Part of ye Province something like the General Courts of Boston in New England where I desire that your Commission & Instructions in ye Execution of them may be publickly read to them & their Assistancess required in their severall Places & Stations of abode; You are also to propound to them that it is my Desire they would make some Proposalls to me as their Desires in what Way they Desire to participate in the Government in Chusing of Justices of the Peace & all other Infer^r Officers as also Officers in the Militia in w^{ch} Propofals as I desire them to remember that I am singly the Lord Proprietor of that Province whereas in other adjacent Governments the Proprietor is in the Commonalty of Inhabitants so I shall consider y^t a well balanced Government wherein the People are secured in ye Enjoyment of their Religious & Civil Liberties will be

an

an Inducement to People to become Inhabitants in the f^d. Province & I have no Cause to doubt of their candid Dealing herein when I remember with how much Respect & Kindnes the Comission by me sent since his Majesty's happy Restoration was embraced by the Universality of the People of that Province.

You may also acquaint them that these Propofals so by them made & by me here confidered of & answered will be fit Subject to be passed into Bills in a General Assembly which I intend God willing shall be holden in the f^d. Province next Summer after ye arrival of ye Governor.

Given under my Seal this One & Twentieth Day of June in ye Sixteenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord Charles the Second by the Grace of God King of England Scotland France & Ireland Defender of the Faith &c Annoq Dom: 1664

FERDINANDO GORGES

The Reliks of a seal appending
on a Label in a Tinn Box.

A true Copy of a Commission from Ferdinando Gorges late Lord Proprietor of the late Province of Main & of the Instructions thereto annexed (except a few Words obliterated).

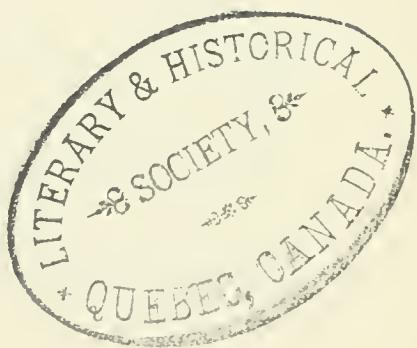
Received July 5. 1733.

Attest JOSEPH MOODY, *Reg^r*





THE PRINCE SOCIETY.



Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

IN THE YEAR ONE THOUSAND EIGHT HUNDRED AND
SEVENTY-FOUR.

AN ACT TO INCORPORATE THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:

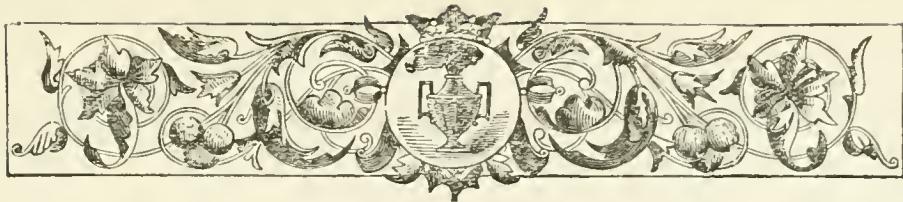
SECTION 1. John Ward Dean, J. Wingate Thornton, Edmund F. Slafter, and Charles W. Tuttle, their associates and successors, are made a corporation by the name of the PRINCE SOCIETY, for the purpose of preserving and extending the knowledge of American History, by editing and printing such manuscripts, rare tracts, and volumes as are mostly confined in their use to historical students and public libraries.

SECTION 2. Said corporation may hold real and personal estate to an amount not exceeding thirty thousand dollars.

SECTION 3. This act shall take effect upon its passage.

Approved March 18, 1874.

NOTE.—The Prince Society was organized on the 25th of May, 1858. What was undertaken as an experiment has proved successful. This ACT OF INCORPORATION has been obtained to enable the Society better to fulfil its object, in its expanding growth.



THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

CONSTITUTION.

ARTICLE I.—This Society shall be called THE PRINCE SOCIETY; and it shall have for its object the publication of rare works, in print or manuscript, relating to America.

ARTICLE II.—The officers of the Society shall be a President, four Vice-Presidents, a Corresponding Secretary, a Recording Secretary, and a Treasurer; who together shall form the Council of the Society.

ARTICLE III.—Members may be added to the Society on the recommendation of any member and a confirmatory vote of a majority of the Council.

Libraries and other Institutions may hold membership, and be represented by an authorized agent.

All members shall be entitled to and shall accept the volumes printed by the Society, as they are issued from time to time, at the prices fixed by the Council; and membership shall be forfeited by a refusal or neglect so to accept the said volumes.

Any person may terminate his membership by resignation addressed in writing to the President; provided, however, that he shall have previously paid for all volumes issued by the Society after the date of his election as a member.

ARTICLE IV.—The management of the Society's affairs shall be vested in the Council, which shall keep a faithful record of its proceedings,

proceedings, and report the same to the Society annually, at its General Meeting in May.

ARTICLE V.—On the anniversary of the birth of the Rev. Thomas Prince, namely, on the twenty-fifth day of May, in every year (but if this day shall fall on Sunday or a legal holiday, on the following day), a General Meeting shall be held at Boston, in Massachusetts, for the purpose of electing officers, hearing the report of the Council, auditing the Treasurer's account, and transacting other business.

ARTICLE VI.—The officers shall be chosen by the Society annually, at the General Meeting; but vacancies occurring between the General Meetings may be filled by the Council.

ARTICLE VII.—By-Laws for the more particular government of the Society may be made or amended at any General Meeting.

ARTICLE VIII.—Amendments to the Constitution may be made at the General Meeting in May, by a three-fourths vote, provided that a copy of the same be transmitted to every member of the Society, at least two weeks previous to the time of voting thereon.



C O U N C I L.

RULES AND REGULATIONS.

1. THE Society shall be administered on the mutual principle, and solely in the interest of American history.
2. A volume shall be issued as often as practicable, but not more frequently than once a year.
3. An editor of each work to be issued shall be appointed, who shall be a member of the Society, whose duty it shall be to prepare,

pare, arrange, and conduct the same through the pres; and, as he will necessarily be placed under obligations to scholars and others for assistance, and particularly for the loan of rare books, he shall be entitled to receive ten copies, to enable him to acknowledge and return any courtesies which he may have received.

4. All editorial work and official service shall be performed gratuitously.

5. All contracts connected with the publication of any work shall be laid before the Council in distinct specifications in writing, and be adopted by a vote of the Council, and entered in a book kept for that purpose; and, when the publication of a volume is completed, its whole expense shall be entered, with the items of its cost in full, in the same book. No member of the Council shall be a contractor for doing any part of the mechanical work of the publications.

6. The price of each volume shall be a hundredth part of the cost of the edition, or as near to that as conveniently may be; and there shall be no other assessments levied upon the members of the Society.

7. A sum, not exceeding one thousand dollars, may be set apart by the Council from the net receipts for publications, as a working capital; and when the said net receipts shall exceed that sum, the excess shall be divided, from time to time, among the members of the Society, by remitting either a part or the whole cost of a volume, as may be deemed expedient.

8. All moneys belonging to the Society shall be deposited in the New England Trust Company in Boston, unless some other banking institution shall be designated by a vote of the Council; and said moneys shall be entered in the name of the Society, subject to the order of the Treasurer.

9. It shall be the duty of the President to call the Council together, whenever it may be necessary for the transaction of business, and to preside at its meetings.

10.

10. It shall be the duty of the Vice-Presidents to authorize all bills before their payment, to make an inventory of the property of the Society during the month preceding the annual meeting and to report the same to the Council, and to audit the accounts of the Treasurer.

11. It shall be the duty of the Corresponding Secretary to issue all general notices to the members, and to conduct the general correspondence of the Society.

12. It shall be the duty of the Recording Secretary to keep a complete record of the proceedings both of the Society and of the Council, in a book provided for that purpose.

13. It shall be the duty of the Treasurer to forward to the members bills for the volumes, as they are issued ; to superintend the sending of the books ; to pay all bills authorized and indorsed by at least two Vice-Presidents of the Society ; and to keep an accurate account of all moneys received and disbursed.

14. No books shall be forwarded by the Treasurer to any member until the amount of the price fixed for the same shall have been received ; and any member neglecting to forward the said amount for one month after his notification, shall forfeit his membership.





OFFICERS
OF
THE PRINCE SOCIETY
FROM ITS ORGANIZATION.

Presidents.

*SAMUEL GARDNER DRAKE, A.M., Boston	1858 to 1870.
JOHN WARD DEAN, A.M., Boston	1870 to 1880.
The Rev. EDMUND F. SLAFTER, D.D., Boston	1880.

Vice-Presidents.

*THOMAS WATERMAN, Boston	1858 to 1866.
*FREDERIC KIDDER, Boston	1858 to 1863.
JEREMIAH COLBURN, A.M., Boston	1858 to 1863.
JOHN WARD DEAN, A.M., Boston	1863 to 1870.
*JOHN WINGATE THORNTON, A.M., Boston	1863 to 1878.
The Rev. EDMUND F. SLAFTER, D.D., Boston	1866 to 1880.
WILLIAM BLAKE TRASK, A.M., Dorchester	1870.
CHARLES HENRY BELL, LL.D., Exeter, N. H.	1874.
JOHN MARSHALL BROWN, A.M., Portland, Me.	1878 to 1885.
JOHN WARD DEAN, A.M., Boston	1880.
JAMES PHINNEY BAXTER, A.M., Portland, Me.	1885.

Corresponding Secretaries.

JOHN WARD DEAN, A.M., Boston	1858 to 1863.
WILLIAM HENRY WHITMORE, A.M., Boston	1863 to 1872.
The Hon. CHARLES H. BELL, LL.D., Exeter, N. H.	1872 to 1874.
*CHARLES WESLEY TUTTLE, Ph. D., Boston	1874 to 1881.
*The Rev. HENRY WILDER FOOTE, A.M., Boston	1882 to 1889.
ROBERT NOXON TOPPAN, A.M., Cambridge	1890.

Recording Secretaries.

WILLIAM HENRY WHITMORE, A.M., Boston	1858 to 1863.
WILLIAM SUMNER APPLETON, A.M., Boston	1863 to 1865.
The Rev. EDMUND F. SLAFTER, D.D., Boston	1865 to 1866.
WILLIAM S. APPLETON, A.M., Boston	1866 to 1870.
WILLIAM THEOPHILUS ROGERS MARVIN, A.M., Boston . . .	1870 to 1873.
WILLIAM H. WHITMORE, A.M., Boston	1873 to 1875
DAVID GREENE HASKINS, Jr., A.M., Cambridge	1875.

Treasurers.

*JOHN WELLS PARKER, Roxbury	1858 to 1863.
JEREMIAH COLBURN, A.M., Boston	1863 to 1873.
*CHARLES WESLEY TUTTLE, Ph.D., Boston	1873 to 1874.
ELBRIDGE HENRY GOSS, Melrose	1874.



OFFICERS
OF
THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

1890.

President.

THE REV. EDMUND F. SLAFTER, D.D. . . . BOSTON, MASS.

Vice-Presidents.

JOHN WARD DEAN, A.M.	BOSTON, MASS.
WILLIAM B. TRASK, A.M.	BOSTON, MASS.
THE HON. CHARLES H. BELL, LL.D. . . .	EXETER, N. H.
JAMES P. BAXTER, A.M.	PORTLAND, ME.

Corresponding Secretary.

ROBERT N. TOPPAN, A.M. CAMBRIDGE, MASS.

Recording Secretary.

DAVID GREENE HASKINS, JR., A.M. CAMBRIDGE, MASS.

Treasurer.

ELBRIDGE H. GOSS, Esq. BOSTON, MASS.



THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

1890.

Charles Francis Adams, A.B.	Quincy, Mass.
William Sumner Appleton, A.M., LL.B.	Boston, Mass.
Thomas Willing Balch, A.B.	Philadelphia, Pa.
The Hon. George Lewis Balcom	Claremont, N. H.
The Hon. Charles Candee Baldwin, A.M., LL.B.	Cleveland, Ohio.
Charles Edward Banks, M.D.	Vineyard Haven, Mass.
James Phinney Baxter, A.M.	Portland, Me.
The Hon. Charles Henry Bell, LL.D.	Exeter, N. H.
The Hon. John James Bell, A.M., LL.B.	Exeter, N. H.
The Rev. Phillips Brooks, S. T. D.	Boston, Mass.
Alexander Brown	Norwood, Va.
John Marshall Brown, A.M.	Portland, Me.
John Nicholas Brown	Providence, R. I.
Joseph Outerbridge Brown	New York, N. Y.
Philip Henry Brown, A.M.	Portland, Me.
Thomas Nadauld Brushfield, M.D.	Budleigh, Salterton, Devon. Eng.
James Smith Buck	Milwaukee, Wis.
Thomas Oliver Hazard Perry Burnham	Boston, Mass.
The Hon. Mellen Chamberlain, LL.D.	Chelsea, Mass.
The Hon. William Eaton Chandler, A.M., LL.B.	Concord, N. H.
George Bigelow Chase, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Warwick William Lawrence Chipman	Montreal, Canada.
Clarence Howard Clark	Philadelphia, Pa.
The Hon. Samuel Crocker Cobb	Boston, Mass.
Jeremiah Colburn, A.M.	Boston, Mass.

Deloraine Pendre Corey	Boston, Mass.
Eraustus Corning	Albany, N. Y.
Ellery Bicknell Crane	Worcester, Mass.
John McNab Currier, M.D.	Newport, Vt.
Abram Edmands Cutter	Charlestown, Mass.
John Ward Dean, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Edward Denham	New Bedford, Mass.
Prof. Franklin Bowditch Dexter, A.M.	New Haven, Conn.
The Rev. Henry Martyn Dexter, D.D.	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel Adams Drake	Kennebunkport, Maine.
Henry Thayer Drowne	New York, N. Y.
Henry Herbert Edes	Charlestown, Mass.
William Henry Egle, A.M., M.D.	Harrisburg, Pa.
Janus Granville Elder	Lewiston, Me.
Samuel Eliot, LL.D.	Boston, Mass.
Joseph Story Fay	Woods Hole, Mass.
John Samuel Hill Fogg, A.M., M.D.	Boston, Mass.
Augustus Allen Galloupe	Beverly, Mass.
Charles William Galloupe	Boston, Mass.
Isaac DeBlois Garfield	Syracuse, N. Y.
Julius Gay, A.M.	Farmington, Conn.
Abner Cheney Goodell, Jr., A.M.	Salem, Mass.
Elbridge Henry Goss	Melrose, Mass.
The Hon. Justice Horace Gray, LL.D.	Boston, Mass.
William Whitwell Greenough, A.B.	Boston, Mass.
Isaac John Greenwood, A.M.	New York, N. Y.
Charles Henry Guild	Newton Highlands, Mass.
David Greene Haskins, Jr., A.M., LL.B.	Cambridge, Mass.
The Hon. Rutherford Birchard Hayes, LL.D.	Fremont, Ohio.
Thomas Wentworth Higginson, A.M.	Cambridge, Mass.
Winfield Scott Hill, M.D.	Augusta, Me.
Amor Leander Hollingsworth, A.M.	Milton, Mass.
Prof. Eben Norton Horsford, A.M.	Cambridge, Mass.
James Frothingham Hunnewell, A.M.	Charlestown, Mass.
David Hunt, A.M., M.D.	Boston, Mass.
Theodore Irwin	Oswego, N. Y.
The Rev. Henry Fitch Jenks, A.M.	Canton, Mass.

The Hon. Clark Jillson	Worcester, Mass.
John Johnston, A.M.	Milwaukee, Wis.
Frank Keene	Lynn, Mass.
David Sherwood Kellogg, A.M., M.D.	Plattsburg, N. Y.
Nathaniel Thayer Kidder, B.A.S.	Milton, Mass.
Alexander Hamilton Ladd	Portsmouth, N. H.
George Lamb	Boston, Mass.
Edward Floyd de Lancey, M.A.	New York, N. Y.
Isaac Remsen Lane	New York, N. Y.
Henry Lee, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
The Hon. Henry Cabot Lodge, Ph.D.	Boston, Mass.
Alfred Small Manson	Boston, Mass.
Edmund Marston	Winnipeg, Manitoba.
Archer Martin	Winnipeg, Manitoba.
William Theophilus Rogers Marvin, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Edward Gay Mason, M.A.	Chicago, Ill.
William Frederic Matchett	Boston, Mass.
Frederick Warren Goddard May	Boston, Mass.
Willard Atherton Nichols, B. S.	Redlands, Cal.
The Rev. James De Normandie, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Prof. Charles Eliot Norton, LL.D.	Cambridge, Mass.
John Henry Osborne	Auburn, N. Y.
George Taylor Paine	Providence, R. I.
Nathaniel Paine	Worcester, Mass.
John Carver Palfrey, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Daniel Parish, Jr.	New York, N. Y.
Francis Parkman, LL.D.	Boston, Mass.
James William Paul, Jr.	Philadelphia, Pa.
Augustus Thorndike Perkins, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
The Rt. Rev. William Stevens Perry, S.T.D., LL.D.	Davenport, Iowa.
William Frederic Poole, LL.D.	Chicago, Ill.
John Frank Pratt, M.D.	Chelsea, Mass.
Samuel Smith Purple, M.D.	New York, N. Y.
The Hon. Nathaniel Foster Safford, A.M.	Milton, Mass.
Joshua Montgomery Sears, A.B.	Boston, Mass.
John Gilmary Shea, LL.D.	Elizabeth, N. J.
The Rev. Carlos Slafter, A.M.	Dedham, Mass.

The Rev. Edmund Farwell Slafter, D.D.	Boston, Mass.
Charles Card Smith	Boston, Mass.
Oliver Bliss Stebbins	Boston, Mass.
George Stewart, Jr., D.C.L.	Quebec, Canada.
Miss Mary Pickering Thompson	Durham, N. H.
Walter Eliot Thwing	Boston, Mass.
Robert Noxon Toppan, A.M., LL.B.	Cambridge, Mass.
William Blake Trask, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
Joseph Burbeen Walker, A.M.	Concord, N. H.
James Otis Watson, A.M.	Orange, N. J.
Miss Rachel Wetherill	Philadelphia, Pa.
Henry Wheatland, A.M., M.D.	Salem, Mass.
The Rev. Horace Leslie Wheeler, A.M.	Newton Centre, Mass.
John Gardner White, A.M.	Cambridge, Mass.
William Henry Whitmore, A.M.	Boston, Mass.
The Hon. Robert Charles Winthrop, LL.D. . . .	Boston, Mass.
The Hon. Charles Levi Woodbury	Boston, Mass.
James Otis Woodward, A.M.	Albany, N. Y.

LIBRARIES.

American Antiquarian Society	Worcester, Mass.
Amherst College Library	Amherst, Mass.
Astor Library	New York, N. Y.
Bibliothèque Nationale	Paris, France.
Bodleian Library	Oxford, Eng.
Boston Athenæum	Boston, Mass.
Boston Library Society	Boston, Mass.
British Museum	London, Eng.
Buffalo Library	Buffalo, N. Y.
Chicago Historical Society	Chicago, Ill.
Chicago Public Library	Chicago, Ill.
Concord Public Library	Concord, Mass.
Dartmouth College Library	Hanover, N. H.
Eben Dale Sutton Reference Library	Peabody, Mass.
Free Public Library	Worcester, Mass.
Harvard College Library	Cambridge, Mass.

Historical Society of Pennsylvania	Philadelphia, Pa.
Lancaster Public Library	Lancaster, Mass.
Library Company of Philadelphia	Philadelphia, Pa.
Library of Cornell University	Ithaca, N. Y.
Library of Parliament	Ottawa, Canada.
Library of the State Department	Washington, D. C.
Literary and Historical Society of Quebec	Quebec, Canada.
Long Island Historical Society	Brooklyn, N. Y.
Lowell City Library	Lowell, Mass.
Maine Historical Society	Portland, Me.
Maryland Historical Society	Baltimore, Md.
Massachusetts Historical Society	Boston, Mass.
Mercantile Library	New York, N. Y.
Minnesota Historical Society	St. Paul, Minn.
Missouri Historical Society	St. Louis, Mo.
Newberry Library	Chicago, Ill.
Newburyport Public Library, Peabody Fund	Newburyport, Mass.
New England Historic-Genealogical Society	Boston, Mass.
Newton Free Library	Newton, Mass.
New York Historical Society	New York, N. Y.
New York Society Library	New York, N. Y.
Peabody Institute of the City of Baltimore	Baltimore, Md.
Portsmouth Athenæum	Portsmouth, N. H.
Providence Public Library	Providence, R. I.
Public Library of Cincinnati	Cincinnati, Ohio.
Public Library of the City of Boston	Boston, Mass.
Public Library of Toronto	Toronto, Canada.
Redwood Library	Newport, R. I.
San Francisco Free Public Library	San Francisco, Cal.
State Historical Society of Wisconsin	Madison, Wis.
State Library of Massachusetts	Boston, Mass.
State Library of New York	Albany, N. Y.
State Library of Rhode Island	Providence, R. I.
State Library of Vermont	Montpelier, Vt.
Williams College Library	Williamstown, Mass.
Woburn Public Library	Woburn, Mass.
Yale College Library	New Haven, Conn.

PUBLICATIONS OF THE SOCIETY.

NEW ENGLAND'S PROSPECT.

A true, lively and experimentall description of that part of *America*, commonly called New England: discovering the State of that Countrie, both as it stands to our new-come English Planters; and to the old Natvie Inhabitants. By WILLIAM WOOD. London, 1634. Preface by Charles Deane, LL.D. pp. 131. Boston, 1865.

THE HUTCHINSON PAPERS.

A Collection of Original Papers relative to the History of the Colony of Massachufetts-Bay. Reprinted from the edition of 1769. Edited by William H. Whitmore, A.M., and William S. Appleton, A.M. 2 vols. Vol. I. pp. 324. Vol. II. pp. 354. Albany, 1865.

JOHN DUNTON'S LETTERS FROM NEW ENGLAND.

Letters written from New England A.D. 1686. By John Dunton, in which are described his voyages by Sea, his travels on land, and the characters of his friends and acquaintances. Now first published from the Original Manuscript in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. Edited by William H. Whitmore, A.M. pp. 340. Boston, 1867.

THE ANDROS TRACTS.

Being a Collection of Pamphlets and Official Papers issued during the period between the overthrow of the Andros Government and the establishment of the second Charter of Massachufetts. Reprinted from the original editions and manuscripts. With a Memoir of Sir Edmund Andros, by the editor, William H. Whitmore, A.M. 3 vols. Vol. I. pp. 215; 1868. Vol. II. pp. 346; 1869. Vol. III. pp. 257; 1874. Boston.

SIR WILLIAM ALEXANDER AND AMERICAN COLONIZATION.

Including three Royal Charters, issued in 1621, 1625, 1628; a Tract entitled an Encouragement to Colonies, by Sir William Alexander, 1624; a Patent, from the Great Council for New England, of Long Island, and a part of the present State of Maine; a Roll of the Knights Baronets of New Scotland; with a Memoir of Sir William Alexander, by the editor, the Rev. Edmund F. Slafter, A.M. pp. 283. Boston, 1873.

JOHN WHEELWRIGHT.

Including his Fast-day Sermon, 1637; his *Mercurius Americanus*, 1645, and other writings; with a paper on the genuineness of the Indian deed of 1629, and a Memoir by the editor, Charles H. Bell, A.M. pp. 253. Boston, 1876.

VOYAGES OF THE NORTHMEN TO AMERICA.

Including extracts from Icelandic Sagas relating to Western voyages by Northmen in the tenth and eleventh centuries, in an English translation by North Ludlow Beamish; with a Synopsis of the historical evidence and the opinion of Professor Rafn as to the places visited by the Scandinavians on the coast of America. Edited, with an Introduction, by the Rev. Edmund F. Slafter, A.M. pp. 162. Boston, 1877.

332 *Publications of the Society.*

THE VOYAGES OF SAMUEL DE CHAMPLAIN.

Including the Voyage of 1603, and all contained in the edition of 1613, and in that of 1619; translated from the French by Charles P. Otis, Ph.D. Edited, with a Memoir and historical illustrations, by the Rev. Edmund F. Slafter, A.M. 3 vols. Vol. I. pp. 340; 1880. Vol. II. pp. 273; 1878. Vol. III. pp. 240; 1882. Boston.

NEW ENGLISH CANAAN, OR NEW CANAAN.

Containing an abstract of New England, composed in three books. I. The first setting forth the Originall of the Natives, their Manners and Customes, together with their tractable Nature and Love towards the English. II. The Natural Indowments of the Countrie, and what Staple Commodities it yieldeth. III. What People are planted there, their Prosperity, what remarkable Accidents have happened since the first planting of it, together with their Tenents and practice of their Church. Written by Thomas Morton of Cliffords Inne, Gent, upon ten Years Knowledge and Experiment of the Country, 1632. Edited, with an Introduction and historical illustrations, by Charles Francis Adams, Jr., A.B. pp. 381. Boston, 1883.

SIR WALTER RALEGH AND HIS COLONY IN AMERICA.

Containing the Royal Charter of Queen Elizabeth to Sir Walter Ralegh for discovering and planting of new lands and countries, March 25, 1584, with letters, discourses, and narratives of the Voyages made to Virginia at his charges, with original descriptions of the country, commodities, and inhabitants. Edited, with a Memoir and historical illustrations, by the Rev. Increase N. Tarbox, D.D. pp. 329. Boston, 1884.

VOYAGES OF PETER ESPRIT RADISSON.

Being an account of his travels and experiences among the North American Indians from 1652 to 1684, transcribed from Original Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library and the British Museum. Edited, with historical illustrations and an Introduction, by Gideon D. Scull. pp. 385. Boston, 1885.

CAPTAIN JOHN MASON, THE FOUNDER OF NEW HAMPSHIRE.

Including his Tract on Newfoundland, 1620, the American Charters in which he was a Grantee, with Letters and other Historical Documents; and a Memoir by the late Charles W. Tuttle, Ph.D. Edited, with historical illustrations, by John Ward Dean, A.M. pp. 492. Boston, 1887.

SIR FERDINANDO GORGES AND HIS PROVINCE OF MAINE.

Including his Tract entitled A Brief Narration, 1658, American Charters granted to him, and other papers; with historical illustrations and a Memoir by James P. Baxter, A.M. 3 vols. Vol. I. pp. 268; 1890. Vol. II. pp. 270; 1890. Vol. III. pp. 353; 1890. Boston.

VOLUMES IN PREPARATION.

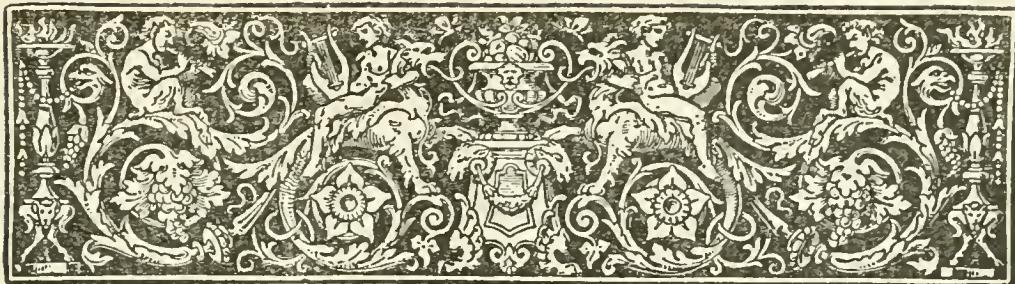
1. SIR HUMPHREY GILBERT, including his Discourse to prove a Passage by the North-west to Cathaia and the East Indies; his Letters Patent to discover and possess lands in North America, granted by Queen Elizabeth, June 11, 1578. With historical illustrations and a Memoir by David G. Haskins, Jr., A.M.

2. SAMUEL MAVERICK, including his Description of New England, Letters and other papers, with historical illustrations and a Memoir by Frank W. Hackett, A.M.

3. EDWARD RANDOLPH, a monograph including his letters and other papers, with historical illustrations and a Memoir by Robert N. Toppan, A.M.

THE PURPOSE AND WORK
OF
THE PRINCE SOCIETY.

BY
THE REV. EDMUND F. SLAFTER, D.D.,
PRESIDENT OF THE SOCIETY.



The following letter of the Rev. Dr. Slafter, President of the Prince Society, addressed to a correspondent in answer to an inquiry as to its purpose and work, is printed by order of the Council for the information of any who may wish to make similar inquiries.

BOSTON, 18 SOMERSET STREET,

MY DEAR SIR,—I am happy to give you the information which you request in your favor of the 5th instant.

THE PRINCE SOCIETY was formed in Boston in 1858, and after testing its practical working by the issue of seven volumes, it asked and obtained an act of incorporation, under the laws of Massachusetts, on the 18th of March, 1874. Its name was assumed in honor of the Rev. THOMAS PRINCE, who flourished one hundred and fifty years ago, as a distinguished antiquary and historian in New England. The object of the Society, as stated in its charter, is, "for the purpose of preserving and extending the knowledge of American history, by editing and printing such manuscripts, rare tracts and volumes as are mostly confined in their use to historical students and public libraries."

Every careful historical student is fully aware that there exists in this country and in England a mass of matter in the form of legal documents, charters, tracts, and letters, which are inaccessible, or of very great rarity, but nevertheless indispensable to a correct knowledge

knowledge of our early history. While these papers are scattered, and some of them perhaps unknown, they are not only liable, but pretty sure to be overlooked, and in consequence the historian is equally sure to fall into error.

It is the object of this Society to collect together these papers, fragments of a complete whole, and print them in volumes, carefully and fully annotated, so that the historical student may have the whole subject before him at once. The Andros tracts, collected and printed by the Prince Society, furnish a good illustration. The difficulties which Sir EDMUND ANDROS encountered here in Boston, resulted in a small revolution. There were of course two sides to the question. Charges and counter-charges, petitions and declarations, narratives and discourses, were issued in great numbers on both sides. After the lapse of two hundred years, the historian cannot form a correct judgment on the merits of the controversy without examining the whole of these documents, which, thanks to the Prince Society, he can now do in the three handsome volumes in which these papers have been reproduced. Before this collection was made, it is not probable that any of our historians had ever seen one tenth of them; and their opinions, whether correct or otherwise, must have been formed on a partial knowledge of the subject.

It is obvious that volumes like these are not suited to the popular taste, and no publisher could afford to put them upon the market. The Society was formed to do what could not be done except by some such associated effort. The members, now numbering about one hundred and seventy-five, mutually bear the expense, and each is entitled to a single copy. The editorial work is gratuitous. In type and paper, and all that relates to mechanical execution, the volumes are intended to be after the highest style of American art.

We have said that the volumes are *published*, but it would be more accurate to say that they are printed for the members of the Society. They are not sold outside of that limit. But there is no disposition

disposition to print only a small number for the purpose of rendering them rare and expensive. Any person desirous of having them will find no obstacle in the way of becoming a member, and thus availing himself of the opportunity of receiving them at their actual cost.

While the Association is conducted on the mutual principle, the paramount motive of the members is not merely to secure a rare volume for themselves, but the publication of works which shall be, in the best sense, contributions to our knowledge of American history. Twenty volumes have already been issued, all of which are of this character. One entitled "Wood's New England Prospect," gives us a picture of life in Boston in 1634. Another, "John Dunton's Letters," furnishes an equally graphic tableau of our Commonwealth in 1686. Then follows the "Hutchinson Papers," a collection of letters and historical documents relating to events stretching through the first sixty years of the history of Massachusetts Bay. The "Andros Tracts" I have already described. I need only add that the work contains a fine steel engraving of Sir Edmund Andros, executed for the Society, the first and only engraving ever issued of this distinguished historical character. It contains likewise a steel engraving of Increase Mather, and two heliotype copies of old engravings of Mather, at the age of eighty and eighty-five respectively.

Another volume entitled "Sir William Alexander and American Colonization," gives a complete history of the efforts of this Scotch nobleman in planting colonies in this country, especially in Nova Scotia and on Long Island, from 1621 to 1641. It has an engraved portrait of Sir William Alexander, from an old plate, in the possession of Henry G. Bohn, of London.

"John Wheelwright" is another monograph, containing the famous discourse delivered in Boston, January 16, 1636, for which he was banished from Massachusetts. It is printed from the only complete and contemporaneous manuscript copy known. The volume

volume contains also his *Mercurius Americanus*, a defence of himself against his persecutors, printed in England in 1645. In the memoir we have a careful analysis of the whole subject of liberty of conscience as then regarded by the authorities in Massachusetts Bay, and a full discussion of the genuineness of the famous Wheelwright deed of 1629.

“The Voyages of the Northmen to America” contains a translation of the Icelandic Sagas, from which we derive all our authentic information in regard to the visits of the Scandinavians to this country in the last part of the tenth and first part of the eleventh centuries. It contains an explanatory and historical introduction and valuable notes.

The “Voyages of Samuel de Champlain” are contained in three volumes. They were never before translated into English. A Memoir fills most of one volume, the first full and complete personal history of this distinguished explorer ever published. The voyages include not only the narratives of all the explorations made by Champlain into the then unbroken forests of America, on the coast of New England, on the shores of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, in the Gulf and on the River of St. Lawrence, of the founding of Quebec, the discovery of Lake Champlain, the exploration of the Ottawa, of Lake Huron, and of Lake Ontario, of his journey into the heart of the present state of New York, but likewise the whole of his minute, ample, and invaluable descriptions of the character and habits, mental, moral, and physical, of the various savage tribes with which he came in contact. They furnish to the student of history and to the student of ethnology most valuable information, unsurpassed in richness and extent, and which cannot be obtained from any other source. The volumes are heavily annotated, containing in all over a thousand notes. They contain two portraits of Champlain, and heliotype copies of all the illustrations in his original work, published in French in 1613, over thirty in number.

The

The "New English Canaan of Thomas Morton" is the first reprint with annotations of this valuable but singular book. It was first printed in 1637, and contains many strictures upon the planters of Massachusetts Bay. The introduction and the notes are the result of careful study, are rich and teeming with information, and illustrate some obscure passages in that early period of our history.

"Sir Walter Ralegh and his Colony in America" elucidates the attempt in 1584 to plant a colony in North Carolina. It contains the Reports of the several expeditions sent out, and is carefully annotated after the general plan and style of the volumes already mentioned.

The "Voyages of Peter Esprit Radisson" are collected and here printed for the first time. Though containing valuable information about the Indians of North America in the seventeenth century, the manuscripts seem for over two hundred years to have escaped the notice of scholars till they were discovered in the Bodleian Library and British Museum, and copied for this volume.

The monograph on "Captain John Mason, the Founder of New Hampshire," contains a carefully prepared memoir of that enterprising and public-spirited man, and an account of his settlements in New England, with copies of his charters, and his voluminous correspondence, much of which has never before been printed.

The three volumes on "Sir Ferdinando Gorges and his Province of Maine" are of great value in illustrating the early history of this country, and particularly of the State of Maine. The editor personally visited the various places in England in which members of the Gorges family were settled, and gathered valuable matter to be used in this work, much of which is new to historical students. The letters are of very great value. A very small portion of them have either been printed or referred to by historical writers.

The publications of the Society, as I have said, now number twenty volumes. Several others are in preparation by competent editors.

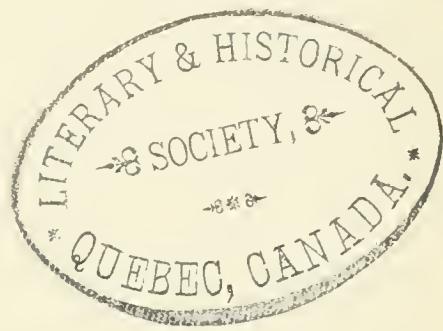
It is the purpose of the Council, as in the past so in the future, to issue no work which may not be referred to as an historical authority on the subject of which it treats.

When a person becomes a member of the Society he is required to take at the price fixed all the books issued *after* he becomes a member, and he may at his option take any volumes previously issued which the Society may have on hand. The average expense of the volumes is about five dollars each. They are bound only in paper, so that each member may consult his own taste as to the binding of his own volumes. Membership may be terminated at any time on the conditions stated in Article III. of the Constitution. Membership involves no expense except that in payment of the volumes as they are issued from time to time. It is the intention of the Council to issue at least one volume annually.

Trusting that I have answered your inquiries fully, I am, my dear Sir,

Yours, very truly,

EDMUND F. SLAFTER.



INDEX.





INDEX.

A.

Acadia, 258.
Agamenticus, 276.
Aguila, Don John de, 118.
Alexander, Sir William, 264, 284.
Algiers, 181.
Alfonso, 46.
Alum, 155, 156.
America, 122, 149, 170, 255, 285, 303,
 304.
Ampthill, 239.
Amsterdam, 119.
Andalusia, 77, 87.
Andover, 31, 40, 244.
Antilles, the, 130.
Archdale, John, 304, 305.
Armada, the, 28, 38, 78.
Asclepiadaceæ, 157.
Ashburton, 31, 40, 230, 244.
Ashton, 246, 265, 276, 282, 295, 296,
 299.
Athlone, 246.
Atlantic Ocean, the, 27.
Austin, Capt., 27, 29.
Austria, Albert, Cardinal of, 44, 87.
Azores, the, 116.

B.

Bagg, Sir James, 11, 17, 19, 20, 70,
 238, 249.
Bagnall, Sir Samuel, 85.
Baker, Elizabeth, 44.
Baker, John, 44.
Banks, Dr. Charles Edward, 258, 285.
Barbadoes, 275.
Barbary, 153, 174.
Barlenga, 7, 27.
Barley, Capt., 115, 143, 149.
Barnstable, 183.
Barons, Mr., 183.
Basingstoke, 31, 40, 244, 245.
Bassin, d'Arcachon, 11.
Bath, the Earl of, 55, 69, 70, 73, 181,
 182, 184.
Bay of Hoggs, 31.
Bayona, 8, 35, 56.
Beecher, William, 286.
Beechy Head, 205, 207.
Berkeley, Gov., 286.
Bexley, 286.
Binden, Viscount, 144.
Biscay, 11, 25.
Black Point, 259, 304.

Blany, Capt., 55.
 Blount, Sir Christopher, 38, 93.
 Blue Point, 304.
 Bonython, Capt. Richard, 212.
 Bordeaux, 14, 127, 131, 132, 133.
 Borracha, 147.
 Boston, England, 259.
 Boston, Mass., 259, 314.
 Bough, William, 173.
 Bourchier, William, 55.
 Bowles, Joseph, 305.
 Brabot Harbor, 304, 305.
 Bradbury, Thomas, 276.
 Braganza, John, Duke of, 77.
 Brest, 63.
 Bretagne, 11, 73.
 Bridgewater, 144.
 Brill, 191.
 Bristol, 124, 255, 257, 292.
 Bristol Channel, 7.
 British Museum, 298.
 Buckingham, the Duke of, 11, 12, 187, 190, 198, 202, 204, 206, 207, 229.
 Buckland, 31.
 Burghley, Lord, 33.
 Burgoyne, George, 176.
 Burlemack, Mr., 214, 215.
 Button, Capt. Thomas, 249, 250.

C.

Cabo da Roca, 61.
 Cadiz, 191.
 Cadiz Expedition, 61, 85, 93.
 Calais, 87, 153.
 Calvert, Sir George, 184, 187.
 Cambridge, 38, 259.
 Cammock, Capt. Thomas, 275.
 Cammock's Point, 275.
 Canada, 157.

Canada Expedition, 284.
 Canaries, the, 116, 289.
 Capawick, 304.
 Cape Cod, 304.
 Cape Finisterre, 7.
 Cape la Hogue, 31.
 Caravel, a, 7.
 Caribbean Sea, 129.
 Caribbees, 283.
 Carleton, Sir Dudley, 263.
 Carpenter, Capt., 80, 81.
 Cary, Sir George, 2, 3.
 Casco Bay, 304.
 Casco River, 276.
 Catchmay, Capt., 72.
 Cawsand Bay, 6, 120, 172, 174, 250.
 Cebures. *See* Sebures.
 Cecil Papers, the, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 7, 9, 11, 13, 14, 17, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 30, 31, 33, 35, 36, 38, 40, 50, 52, 53, 54, 56, 58, 61, 70, 72, 79, 81, 84, 86, 88, 89, 92, 94, 96, 99, 100, 101, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 111, 114, 115, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 123, 126, 129, 132, 136, 141, 143, 144, 145, 146, 148, 151, 152, 156, 161, 164, 166.
 Cecil, Sir Robert, 1, 2, 3, 5, 9, 10, 11, 13, 17, 20, 23, 26, 27, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 42, 43, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 56, 60, 61, 63, 66, 68, 70, 72, 76, 78, 79, 81, 84, 86, 87, 88, 89, 91, 94, 96, 99, 100, 101, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109, 111, 113, 114, 115, 118, 119, 123, 126, 129, 136, 148, 151, 154, 161, 171.
 Challons, Capt. Henry, 134, 139, 140, 145, 146, 148, 151, 156, 168, 170.
 Chaloner, Sir Thomas, 156.
 Champernoun, Francis, 281, 304, 305.
 Chance, the, 77.

Charing Cross, 230.
Charles I., 30, 191, 192, 195, 231, 246, 248, 282, 303.
Charles II., 306, 315.
Charlton, 113.
Chelsea, 144.
Cherbourg, 31.
Chevreuse, Duc de, 200.
Chudleigh, Sir John, 246.
Cifarga, 18.
Cleeve, George, 280, 281, 282.
Clifford, Sir Conyers, 60, 98.
Cockington, 3.
Coke, Sir John, 190, 191, 210, 211, 214, 215, 217, 220, 221, 222, 228, 231, 232, 234, 238, 276, 279, 280.
Coke Manuscripts, the, 190, 210, 212, 214, 217, 220, 231, 276, 279.
Coke, Sir Richard, 231.
Cole, Basset, 196, 203, 205, 210, 214, 220.
Collever, John, 173.
Colmer, Abraham, 176, 183.
Colonial Papers, 139, 252, 256, 260, 263, 265, 268, 270, 272, 273, 283, 287, 292, 293, 294.
Colonization, 171, 258.
Concord, the, 173.
Connaught, 246.
Connecticut, 282.
Connecticut River, 267.
Conway, Sir Edward, 191, 192, 194, 199, 202, 205, 208, 216, 217, 221, 222, 229, 230, 238, 239, 240, 243, 244, 245, 247, 248.
Conway, Sir John, 191.
Cooke, Robert, 146, 147.
Copplestones, the, 68.
Corfe Castle, 73.
Cornwall, 30, 38, 49, 50, 52, 65, 88, 176.
Corporation of Fishmongers, the, 176.
Corunna, 18, 28.
Cotton, the Rev. John, 259.
Cotton, the Rev. William, 259.
Couldrey, Baron de, 184, 187.
Council for New England, 255.
Council for the Indies, 145.
County Palatine, 304.
Courtney, Jane, 44.
Courtney, Sir William, 44.
Cousen, Humphrey, 173.
Crewkerne, 31.
Crofts, Capt., 11, 20, 21, 22, 27, 29.
Cromwell, Oliver, 73, 248.
Crymes, Mr., 68.
Cumberland, the Dukes of, 60.
Cunega, Don Pedro de, 171.
Cursin, Philipp, 17, 20.
Cutts, Robert, 305.

D.

Danvers, Sir Charles, 92, 93.
D'Anvers, Roland, 92.
Dare, Jasper, 194, 197, 200.
Darell, Mr., 24.
Dartmouth, 22, 78, 118.
D'Aulney, 258.
Davies, John, 200.
Davis, Sir John, 92, 93.
Davis, Nevill, 134, 135.
Davis, Capt. Robert, 159.
Davis, Thomas, 200.
Davis, Mr., 146.
Dawes, Sir Abraham, 283.
Dean, John Ward, 281, 284.
Debtford, 255, 257.
De Burges, A., 145.
De Martey, Monsieur, 212, 213.
Derbyshire, 231.

Derickson, Salker, 243.
 De Vere, Henry, 33.
 Devon, 3, 38, 182.
 Devonport, 42, 51.
 Devonshire, 6, 44, 65, 68, 205.
 Devonshire, the Earl of, 38.
 Dieppe, 197, 198, 199, 200, 202, 206.
 Digby, Sir John, 171.
 Doddington, Sir William, 102, 103.
 Dodington, Capt., 72.
 Dofe, John, 173.
 Domeneca, 129.
 Dorsetshire, 65.
 Dover, 173, 174.
 Drake, Sir Francis, 11, 23.
 Dreadnaught, the, 61.
 Drid, Jasper, 197.
 Dudley, John, 282.
 Dunkirk, 213.
 Dunkirkers, the, 88, 117, 119, 210, 246.
 Dunster Castle, 293.
 Dutch, the, 12, 17, 254, 267, 287.
 Dutch Plantations, the, 253, 256, 267.

E.

Easterlings, 118.
 East Indies, the, 114, 118, 216, 217.
 Easton, Capt. Peter, 173, 174.
 Edgecombe, Sir Robert, 183.
 Effiat, the Marquis d', 195, 200, 201, 202.
 Eleott, 49.
 Elizabeth, 5, 30, 44, 58, 144, 147, 289.
 Emanuel College, 259.
 Embden, 153.
 England, 8, 11, 22, 28, 34, 35, 39, 45, 48,
 49, 57, 61, 64, 70, 72, 77, 88, 131, 132,
 138, 146, 153, 156, 157, 159, 161, 169,
 170, 171, 174, 176, 185, 188, 190, 191,

196, 199, 201, 205, 207, 249, 258, 259,
 286, 303, 304, 306.
 English Channel, 31.
 English, the, 8, 13, 24, 25, 35, 39, 78,
 170, 171, 174, 247.
 Essex, 276.
 Essex Rebellion, 88, 92.
 Essex, Robert, Earl of, 3, 33, 34, 35, 38,
 39, 40, 42, 48, 56, 57, 58, 60, 61, 85,
 92, 93, 94, 96, 246.
 Essex, Walter, Earl of, 93.
 Eton, 178.
 Europe, 156, 157.
 Exeter, 31, 244, 245.
 Exon, 124.
 Eyre, Thomas, 255, 257, 284, 285.

F.

Fairfax, Ferdinand, Lord, 298, 299.
 Falmouth, 47.
 Fasey, 56.
 Fecke, Peter, 13.
 Felton, 187.
 Fenner, George, 31, 32, 33, 66.
 Ferne, Sir John, 174.
 Ferrol, 18, 21, 27, 28, 29, 35.
 Fisher, John, 173.
 Flanders, 226.
 Fleet, the, 258.
 Flemings, the, 11, 14, 32, 39, 169.
 Florence, the Duke of, 4, 10, 175.
 Florida, 129, 130, 131.
 Fonnes, Humphrey, 4, 8, 17, 19, 22, 25,
 28.
 Forts, in Rhé, 247; in St. Martin's, 246.
 Fowell, John, 221.
 Foye, 230.
 France, 11, 22, 25, 28, 31, 80, 127, 129,

155, 166, 176, 192, 195, 199, 200, 211, 219, 225, 226, 241, 248, 263.

Frankley, 92.

French, the, 21, 22, 25, 32, 78, 84, 155, 202, 207, 236, 241, 247, 248, 287.

G.

Galegos, 18.

Galicia, 8, 18, 21, 28, 31.

Galicians, the, 18.

Gardiner, Henry, 285.

Garonne River, the, 113.

Garroway, Sir William, 179.

Gatehouse, 96, 99, 101, 103, 105, 106, 107, 109.

Geeye, Arthur, 174.

Geneva, 22.

George, the, 286.

Georgetown, 156.

Germany, 22.

Gerrard, Sir Thomas, 159.

Gibbons, Ambrose, 258, 260.

Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, 33, 159.

Gilbert, Sir John, 3, 33.

Gilbert, Ralegh, 33, 158, 159, 190, 191.

Glanvile, Thomas, 12.

Goddardes, Anthony, 48.

Godfrey, Edward, 258.

Godolphin, Sir Francis, 30.

Gonzague, Charles de, 184.

Gorges, Sir Arthur, 144.

Gorges family, 68.

Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 56, 57, 58, 60, 61, 63, 64, 66, 68, 70, 72, 73, 74, 76, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82,

84, 86, 87, 88, 89, 91, 92, 94, 96, 99, 100, 101, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109, 111, 112, 114, 115, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 126, 128, 129, 134, 136, 139, 140, 141, 143, 144, 148, 150, 151, 152, 154, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 164, 165, 166, 168, 170, 171, 172, 174, 175, 176, 178, 181, 182, 183, 187, 190, 191, 192, 194, 195, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 205, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 214, 215, 216, 217, 220, 221, 222, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 234, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 251, 252, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 263, 265, 268, 270, 271, 273, 275, 276, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 303, 304, 306, 313, 315.

Gorges, John, 304, 309.

Gorges Society, 285.

Gorges, Sir Thomas, 106, 112, 306, 314.

Gorges, William, 275, 276, 277.

Gorgiana, 305.

Graves, Thomas, 156.

Great Britain, 202.

Greenwich, 293.

Griffith, George, 81, 284.

Grobbell, John, 221.

Grogne, 28, 35, 44, 46, 62, 69, 75, 77.

Gunpowder Plot, the, 38.

Guzman, Gaspar Alonzo Perez de, 77.

H.

Hague, the, 286.

Hamburg, 4.

Hamburgers, the, 12, 152.

Hampshire, 102.

Hampton, 12, 21.

Hansa Towns, the, 226.

Hanworthe, 27.
 Harfordbridge, 31.
 Harper, Capt., 11, 21, 25.
 Harris, Christopher, 2, 3, 4, 17, 19, 37, 38, 80, 81.
 Harris, John, 197.
 Harris, Thomas, 197.
 Hartford, 259.
 Harvy, William, 173.
 Havre, 239.
 Hawkins, Sir John, 11.
 Hawkins, Lady, 123, 124.
 Hawkins, Sir Richard, 123, 124.
 Haynes, the Rev. John, 282.
 Hayti, 130.
 Hazard, Ebenezer, 159.
 Heath, Hug: 84, 86.
 Heigham, Capt., 228.
 Hele, John, 15.
 Henrietta Maria, 195, 248.
 Hewes, William, 173.
 Hines, Nicholas, 139.
 Hinton St. George, the Lord of, 256.
 Hitching, Richard, 81.
 Hocking, Richard, 81.
 Holland, 119, 243, 286.
 Holland, the Earl of, 248.
 Hollanders, the, 114, 136, 169, 174, 213, 217, 238, 257.
 Honfleur, 239.
 Honiton, 31, 40, 244, 245.
 Hooke, Francis, 304, 305.
 Hopkins, Edward, 282.
 Horne, 243.
 Howard, Douglas, 144.
 Howard, Lord Thomas, 35, 38, 39, 40, 144.
 Hoyt, Albert Harrison, 281.
 Hudson's Bay, 249.
 Hudson's Strait, 249.

Humfrey, John, 282.
 Hungary, 22.
 Hutching, Richard, 81.
 Hutton, Sir Robert, 182.

I.

Indian fleet, the, 77.
 Indians, 130, 310.
 Indies, the, 23, 132, 133, 145, 227.
 Ireland, 3, 8, 35, 44, 52, 56, 57, 77, 82, 84, 85, 92, 153, 188, 191, 243, 250.
 Isle of Rhé, 12, 244, 247.
 Isle of St. Martin's, 238.
 Isle of Wight, 175.
 Italians, 12, 48.
 Ivy Bridge, 244.

J.

James I., 44, 144, 147, 170, 179, 187, 191, 195, 217, 248, 249.
 Jamestown, 286.
 Jersey, 239, 240.
 Jesuits, 226.
 Jewell's Island, 156.
 Jewey, Henry, 197, 200.
 Job, Capt., 85, 119.
 Jones, Rowland, 144.
 Jope, Capt., 85, 119.
 Jordan, Robert, 304, 305.
 Josselyn, Henry, 259, 304, 305.
 Jurer, Henry, 197, 200.

K.

Keddewe, Charles, 183.
 Kent, 204, 258.
 Kerry, 246.
 Killultagh, Viscount, 191.

Kirke, 284.
Kittery, 281, 305.
Knollys, Lettice, 93.

L.

Laconia Company, 258, 284.
Laconia Patent, 255, 258.
Lans-prefadoes, 232.
Laud, William, 38, 259, 263.
Lavington, 279, 280.
Legatt, Capt., 7, 18, 20, 23, 24, 46, 72, 74.
Leger, 180.
Leghorn, 12.
Leicester, the Earl of, 93.
Lemos, Conde de, 145.
Lewis, Don, 152.
Lincolnshire, 259.
Lindsay, the Earl of, 256, 264.
Lisbon, 8, 12, 21, 23, 27, 28, 48, 57, 61, 62, 87, 118, 210.
Lisbon, Maine, 156.
Litchfield, 156.
Little St. John, the, 224.
Littleton, John, 92.
Lizard, the, 39, 87.
London, 23, 40, 46, 77, 94, 118, 124, 144, 167, 171, 173, 174, 176, 177, 190, 196, 203, 244, 247, 248, 255, 281, 283.
Londoners, 179.
Loo, 87.
Lorraine, 195.
Louis XIII., 192.
Love, Capt., 122.
Low Countries, the, 22, 39, 67, 74, 83, 87, 115, 116, 117, 136, 167, 217, 219.
Ludgate, 258.
Luttrell, Thomas, 293.

M.

Madeira, 129, 289.
Madrid, 28, 171. [315.
Maine, 212, 254, 258, 259, 281, 303, 304, 305.
Mamora, 174.
Mansfield, 228.
Mantua, the Duke of, 184.
Marcellias, 22.
Mariegalante, 129.
Marldon Church, 33.
Marvin, Sir Henry, 238, 249.
Mary-honor, the, 256.
Mafon, Capt., John, 252, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 283, 284, 285.
Massachusetts, 258, 276, 296.
Massachusetts Bay, 271, 273.
Mather, the Rev. Cotton, 259, 282.
Mathews, Walter, 119, 123.
Matthews, Capt., 229.
Mayer, James, 197.
Mayne, the, 240.
Meautys, Thomas, 286.
Medici, Cosmo de, 175.
Medici, Ferdinand de, 4, 175.
Medina, the Duke of, 77.
Melbourne House, 222, 231.
Mena, Capt. Joseph de, 118.
Middlesex, 283.
Middleton, Capt., 23, 175.
Milborough, 48.
Mondy, H., 230.
Moody, Joseph, 315.
Morton, 282.
Morlaix, 11.
Mount Edgecomb, 183.
Mountjoy family, 93.
Mountjoy, Lord, 38, 39, 40.
Moyer, James, 197, 200.
Munck, Levinus, 133.

N.

Naples, 117, 145.
 Nautican, 304.
 Neale, Francis, 304, 305.
 Neale, Capt. Walter, 259.
 Neptune, the, 191, 192, 202, 205, 207, 208.
 Nesonn, Thomas, 7.
 Netherlands, the, 55, 191.
 Nevers, the Duc de, 184, 185.
 New England, 156, 183, 253, 258, 259, 260, 263, 265, 268, 272, 273, 276, 277, 282, 284, 285, 292, 303, 307, 313, 314.
 Newfoundland, 160.
 New Hampshire, 258.
 New Haven, 184.
 Newmarket, 24.
 Newnham, 3.
 New Plymouth, 256, 267.
 Newport, Capt. Christopher, 148.
 Newton, William, 76, 78.
 Nicholas, Sir Edward, 199, 201, 202, 228, 229.
 Nicholas, John, 199.
 Nivelle, the, 28.
 Northampton, Lord, 144.
 Northwest Passage, the, 249.
 Norton, Capt., 258.
 Nottingham, the Earl of, 88.
 Nova Hispania, 153.

O.

Ogarsabal, Martyn, 35.
 Orange, the Prince of, 213.
 Orient, the, 79.
 Osborne, Mr., 34, 36.
 Osgood, John, 230.
 Oxford, the Earl of, 33.

P.

Padeglia, Don Martin de, 21.
 Papal States, the, 156.
 Parillo, Dr., 157.
 Paris, 200, 203, 204, 206.
 Parker, Sir Nicholas, 44.
 Parker, Thomas, 44.
 Parkinges, John, 56.
 Pearce, the bark, 20, 21, 22.
 Peckham, Sir George, 159.
 Pejepscot, 304.
 Pemaquid, 259.
 Pennington, Sir John, 204, 220, 221, 223.
 Penobscot, 258.
 Perin, 230.
 Peterson, Cornelius, 238.
 Philip II., 44.
 Philip III., 57, 78.
 Phillip Boniventure, 173.
 Pirates, 116, 179, 181, 235, 277.
 Piscataqua, 258, 259, 305.
 Piscataqua Company, 275.
 Piscataqua River, 303.
 Pius IV., 4.
 Plymouth, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 10, 11, 13, 14, 16, 17, 19, 20, 22, 24, 25, 28, 29, 30, 34, 35, 36, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 46, 50, 51, 53, 56, 57, 60, 61, 63, 68, 74, 76, 78, 80, 81, 84, 86, 87, 88, 114, 115, 117, 118, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 129, 134, 139, 140, 143, 145, 150, 152, 154, 159, 160, 164, 165, 168, 170, 173, 176, 178, 181, 182, 183, 187, 199, 209, 211, 212, 215, 216, 220, 221, 222, 228, 229, 230, 232, 233, 234, 238, 240, 242, 244, 247, 248, 251, 252, 254, 277.
 Popham Colony, the, 33, 176.
 Popham Expedition, the, 156.

Popham, Sir Francis, 155, 293.
Popham, Capt. George, 143, 144, 145.
Popham, Sir John, 124.
Portland, 259.
Porto Rico, 130.
Portsmouth, 23, 24, 260.
Portugal, 27, 28, 46, 50, 61, 77, 144, 145, 176.
Poulett, Sir John, 256, 298.
Poulett, Sir John, Jr., 256.
Prince, John, 3, 246.
Prince Pallatinate, 277, 278.
Privy Council, 14, 17, 19, 22, 24, 25, 43, 64, 66, 68, 70, 72, 73, 74, 76, 80, 81, 88, 141, 143, 145, 146, 152, 154, 178, 180, 208, 210, 241, 242, 270, 286, 292.
Prout's Neck, 275.
Provincial Records of New Hampshire, 255, 258.
Purbeck, 73.
Purchase, Thomas, 304, 305.
Pyritic shale, 155, 156.

Q.

Quarles, Sir Robert, 24.

R.

Ralegh, Sir Walter, 35, 38, 39, 40, 42, 45, 62, 63, 64, 65, 68, 89, 93.
Raynes, Francis, 305.
Richard, the, 134.
Rich, Henry, 248.
Richmond, 5.
Richmond's Island, 276.
Rishworth, Edward, 305.
River of Bordeaux, 131.
Roborough Down, 68.

Rochelle, 14, 21, 185, 211, 219, 227, 243, 249.
Rochellers, the, 225, 244.
Rochester, 203, 206.
Rock of Lisbon, 61.
Rotterdam, 13.
Rouen, 60.
Ruzé, Antoine Coffier de, 195.

S.

Saco, 212, 304.
Sagadahoc River, 33, 156, 303.
St. Andrews, 57.
St. Andrew's Church, 28, 40, 42, 176.
St. Aufstell, 230.
St. Ellens, 42.
St. George, 77.
St. Germain, 176.
Saint-Jean-de-Luz, 28, 35.
St. John, the, 212, 224.
St. John, Thomas, 134.
St. Lukes, 62, 77.
St. Mallows, 219.
St. Mary, 87.
St. Maufe Castle, 47.
St. Nicholas Island, 70.
Salisbury, the Earl of, 117, 118, 120, 121, 122, 123, 126, 128, 139, 143, 145, 150, 152, 157, 158, 160, 164, 165, 166, 168, 170, 171, 174, 175, 176.
Sallaum, 87.
Saltash, 50, 51.
Sanders, Capt., 23.
Sandorm Castle, 204.
Sandys, Margaret, 286.
Sandys, Sir Samuel, 286.
San Juan de Porto Rico, 62.
Santo Domingo, 129, 134.
Sarsaparilla, 157.

Sarum, 31.
 Savage, James, 258.
 Savages, 161.
 Scilly Island, 7, 8, 30, 171, 173, 241.
 Scotchmen, 32, 39.
 Scotland, 176.
 Sebures, Peter, 62, 82, 83, 84, 118.
 Selby, 299.
 Seminary Priests, 8.
 Seville, 25, 77, 135.
 Sezark, 18.
 Shaftesbury, 31, 244, 245.
 Sherborne, 31, 40, 64, 230, 244, 245.
 Sherborne Castle, 65.
 Sherwill, Nicholas, 183.
 Sherwill, Thomas, 176.
 Shrewsbury, the Earl of, 58.
 Shirley, Sir Thomas, 79, 256.
 Sidonia, the Duke of, 77.
 Silk, 157.
 Small Point, 156.
 Somerset, 144, 276.
 Somersetshire, 246, 276.
 Sotamayor, Don Diego de, 57.
 Soubiza, Monsieur, 211, 212, 219, 224, 225, 227.
 Southampton, the Earl of, 92.
 South Cape, 152, 174.
 Spain, 24, 27, 28, 35, 38, 39, 40, 44, 49, 51, 62, 70, 80, 85, 132, 133, 135, 144, 148, 149, 151, 152, 156, 157, 168, 170, 176, 187, 189, 190, 217, 225, 226, 240, 241, 289, 313.
 Spanish America, 157.
 Spanish Correspondence, the, 171.
 Spanish, the, 7, 8, 11, 12, 14, 18, 22, 25, 33, 35, 38, 39, 40, 41, 46, 49, 50, 56, 62, 63, 73, 117, 126, 130, 131, 135, 147, 151, 152, 170, 171, 226, 247, 248, 287, 304.

Spenser, Robert, 173.
 Spinola, 33.
 Sprague's River, 156.
 Stafford, the Earl of, 286.
 Stallenge, William, 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 8, 13, 17, 19, 20, 22, 23, 24, 25, 51.
 Stanmore, 283.
 Stannaries, 64, 230.
 Stannary Courts, the, 65.
 Star Chamber, the, 68.
 State Papers, 26, 27, 29, 42, 43, 46, 47, 48, 63, 64, 66, 68, 73, 74, 76, 82, 87, 89, 168, 171, 175, 181, 184, 187, 191, 195, 197, 198, 199, 201, 202, 206, 208, 216, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 234, 238, 239, 243, 245, 247, 248, 251.
 Steavens, Capt., 174.
 Stogumber, 276.
 Stoker's Bay, 208.
 Stonehouse, 42, 56.
 Straits of Magellan, 246.
 Strode, Sir William, 2, 3, 68.
 Suffolk, the Earl of, 38, 144.
 Surdiance, Madam, 64.

T.

Tamar River, 51.
 Temple, Catherine, 44.
 Temple, Sir John, 44.
 Tennessee, 157.
 Terceira, 116.
 Thames, the, 67.
 Theobalds, 179.
 Topsome, 165.
 Tower of London, 92, 93.
 Tredough, 86.
 Trelawny, Robert, 176, 177.
 Trelawny, Robert, Jr., 176, 182, 275, 276.

Trematon Castle, 49, 50.
Trinity College, 259.
Truelove, the, 32.
Trurow, 230.
Trusley, 231.
Tucker, Daniel, 129, 132.
Tunis, 181.
Turks, 180, 184, 185.
Turner, 160.
Tuscany, the Grand Duke of, 4, 12, 175.
Tutchen, Anthony, 194, 197, 200.
Tuttle, Charles Wesley, 281.

V.

Valdefon, Pedro de, 78.
Vane, Sir Henry, 280, 282.
Vanguard, the, 204, 206.
Vennarde, Capt., 63, 64.
Vere, Henry, 33.
Vere, Sir Horace, 33.
Vienna, 57.
Villeucleres, M., 200.
Villiers, George, 187. *See* Buckingham, the Duke of, 187.
Vines, Richard, 275, 280, 281.
Virginia, 132, 133, 143, 144, 148, 154, 161, 167, 171, 257, 283, 286.
Virginia Company, 283, 286.
Virgin Island, the, 130.

W.

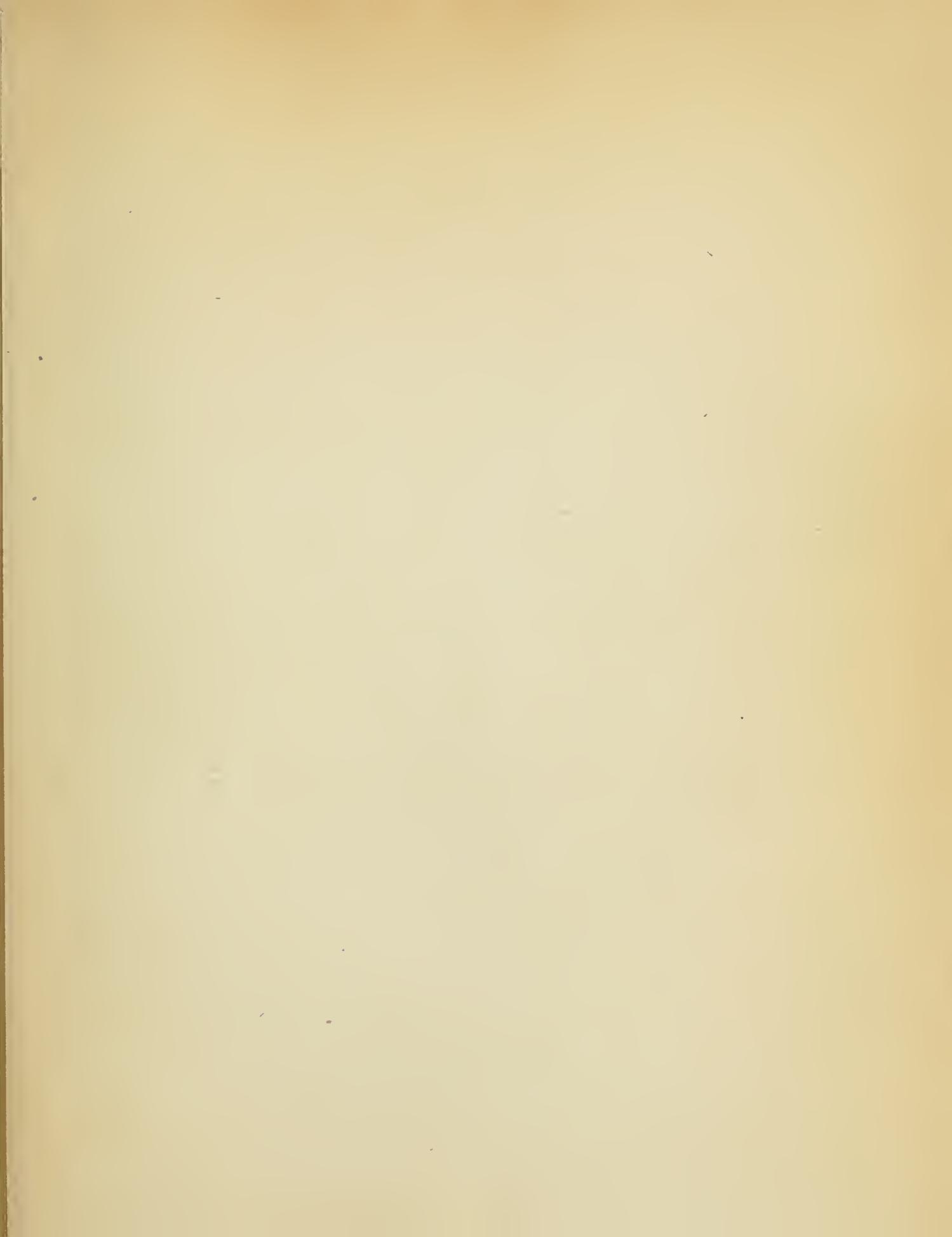
Wales, 22.
Wannerton, Thomas, 258, 260, 284.
Warwick, the, 284.
Warwick, the Earl of, 38, 255, 257, 275.

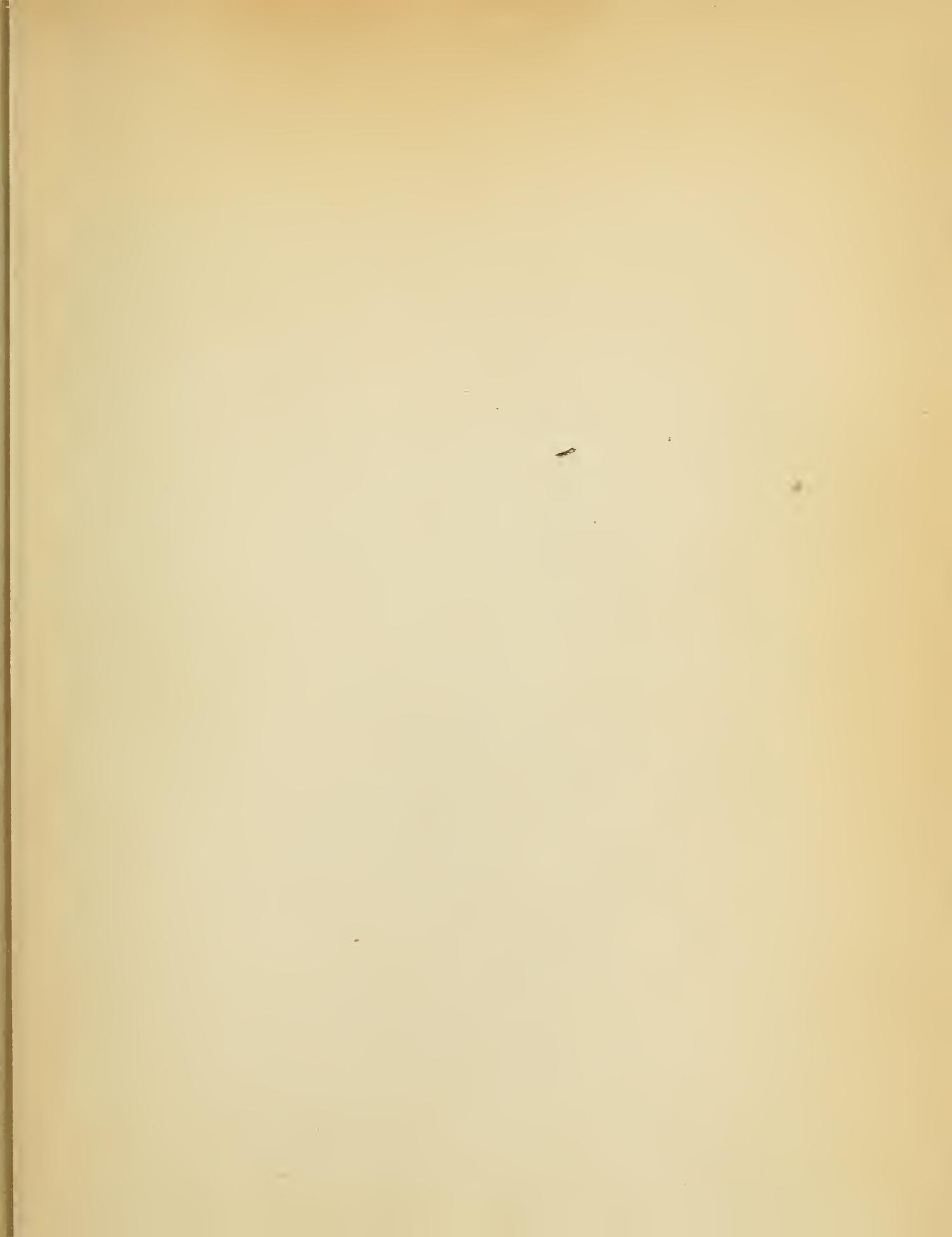
Warwick, Penelope, 38.
Watts, Henry, 304, 305.
Wells, 305.
West Indies, the, 62, 237, 238.
Westminster, 303.
Whitaker, Laurence, 286.
Whitehall, 3.
White, Peter, 194, 197.
Wicken, Bonant, 276.
Williams, Sir Abraham, 286.
Willoughby, Lord, 44, 93.
Wilmington, 258.
Wilmot, Sir Charles, 246.
Wilson, the Rev. John, 259.
Wiltshire, 199.
Winchester House, 275.
Windebank, Sir Francis, 263, 265, 273, 275, 287, 294, 295.
Winter, John, 276.
Winthrop, John, 258, 280, 282, 295, 296.
Winwood, Sir Ralph, 286.
Withering, Mr., 245.
Withers, Thomas, 305.
Wolmer, William, 173.
Worcestershire, 92.
Worth, James, 28.
Worth, R. N., 124.
Wosten-Holmes-Town, 283.
Wostenholm, Sir John, 283.
Wyatt, Sir Francis, 286.

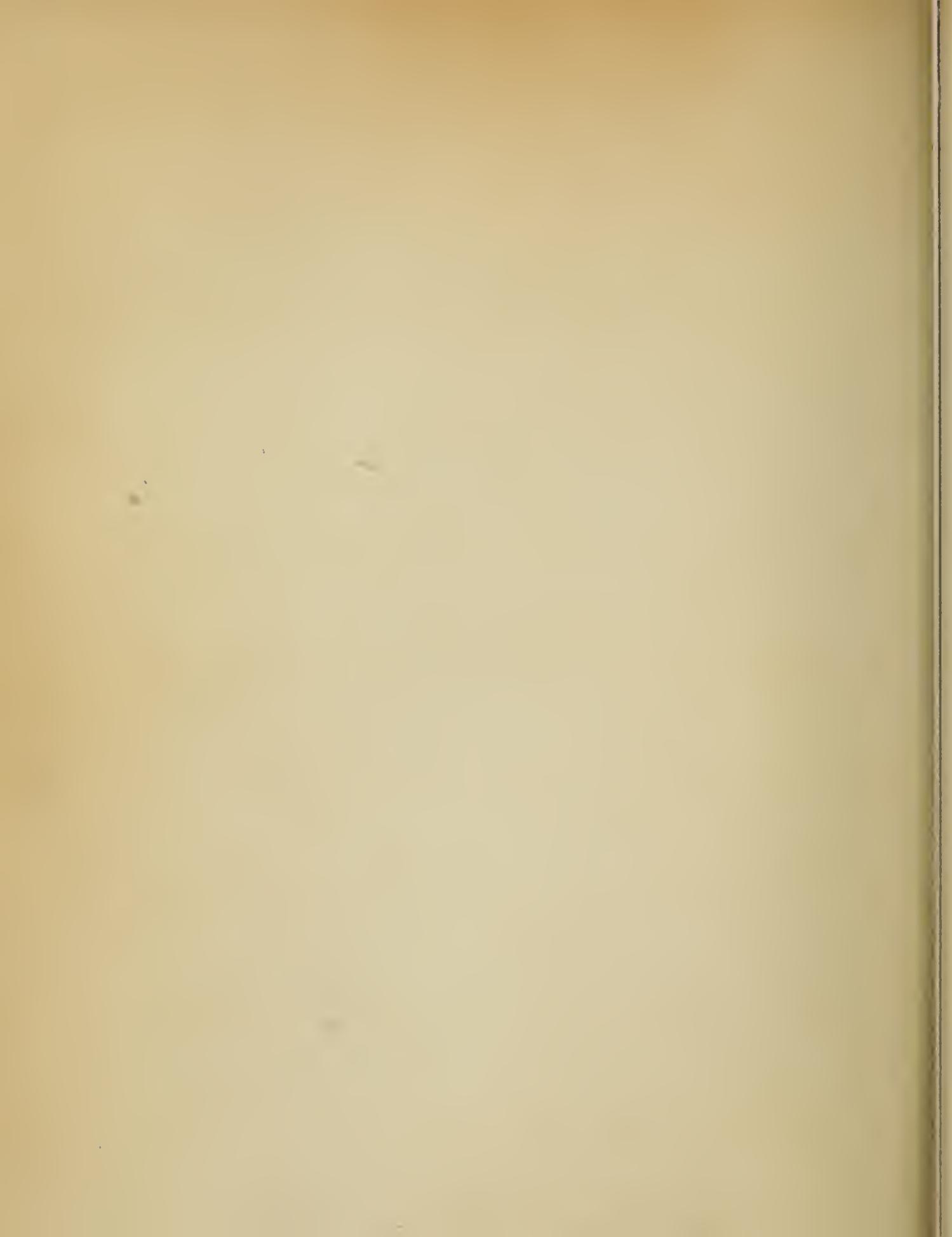
Y.

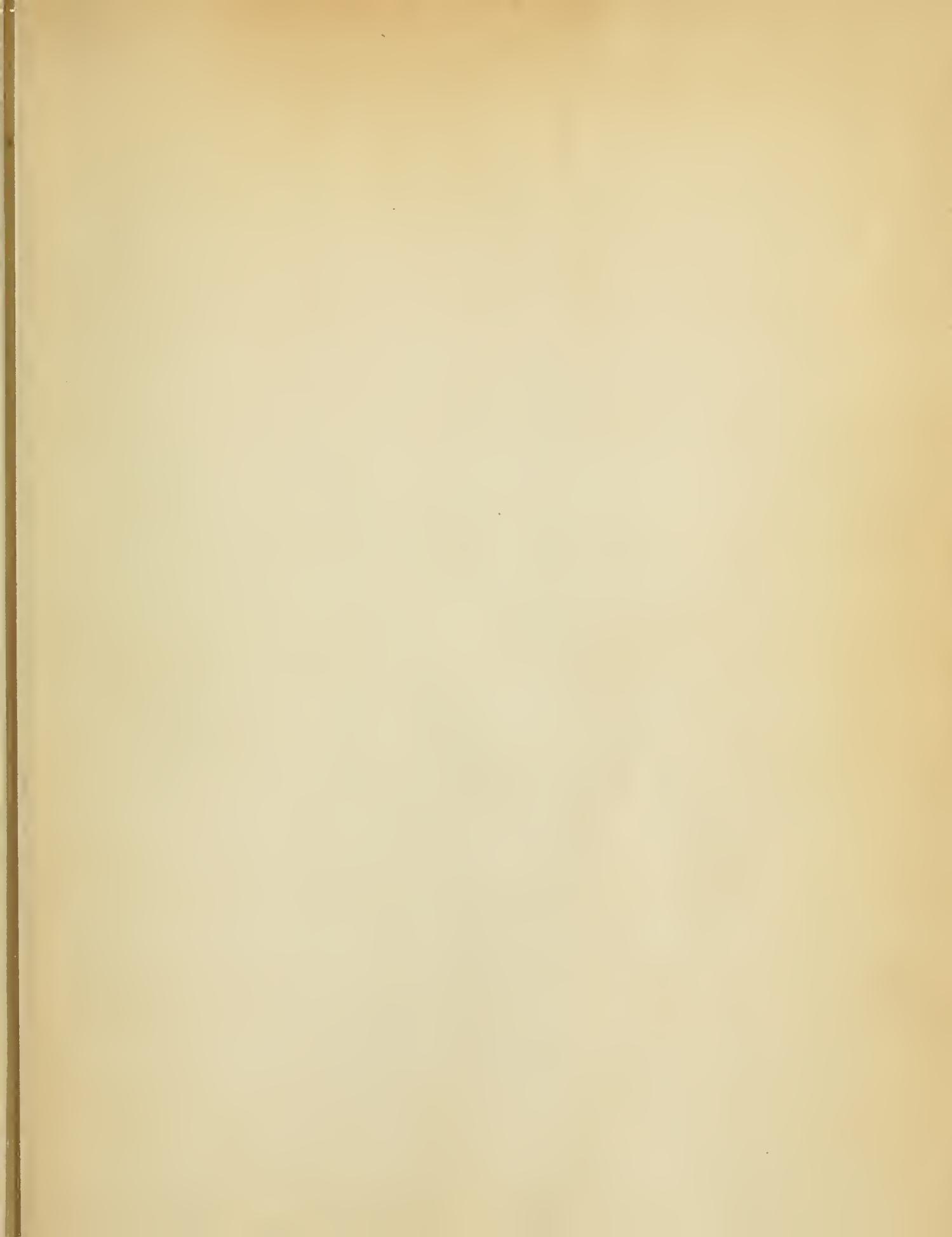
Yonge, James, 28.
York, 299.
York Records, the, 303.
Yorkshire, 156.

The Indices in these volumes were prepared by Mr. Edward Denham, New Bedford, Massachusetts











University of Toronto
Library

DO NOT
REMOVE
THE
CARD
FROM
THIS
POCKET



HUS
B3557s

Vol. 3.

NAME OF BORROWER

DATE

439308
Baxter, James Phinney (ed.)
Sir Ferdinand and his Province of Maine.
Vol. 3.

UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C
39 14 03 20 07 001 3